

**ЖӘНГІР ХАН АТЫНДАҒЫ БАТЫС ҚАЗАҚСТАН АГРАРЛЫҚ
ТЕХНИКАЛЫҚ УНИВЕРСИТЕТІ**

Искакова Ш.Г., Кенжегалиева А.Г.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR AND EXERCISES

**АҒЫЛШЫН ТІЛІ ГРАММАТИКАСЫ
ЖӘНЕ ЖАТТЫҒУЛАРЫ**

Оқу әдістемелік құралы

Орал, 2015

ӘОЖ 81.2.Англ 2

Е61

Құрастырған: Исакова Ш.Г., аға оқытушы
Кенжеғалиева А.Г., аға оқытушы

Рецензент: Чечетко М.В., фил. ғыл.канд.
Муханбетқалиев А.С., пед. ғыл.канд.

АҒЫЛШЫН ТІЛІ ГРАММАТИКАСЫ ЖӘНЕ ЖАТТЫҒУЛАРЫ

Кафедра отырысында талқыланып, бекітілді. 25 мамыр 2015ж., № 11 хаттама

Көптілді білім беруді дамыту орталығының отырысында басылымға ұсынылды. 25 мамыр 2015ж., № 6 хаттама

Университеттің ОӘК-мен мақұлданды. __мамыр 2015ж., №__ хаттама

Ұсынылып отырған оқу құралы жоғары оқу орындарының студенттеріне және өз бетімен ағылшын тілін үйренушілерге арналған. Ағылшын тілі грамматикасы қазақ тіл құбылыстарымен салыстырмалы түрде қарастырылып, ағылшын тілін үйренуде ана тілі кедергі боларлық немесе жеңілдік тигізетін жақтары көрсетілген. Ағылшын тіліндегі зат есім, сын есім, сан есім, есімдік, етістіктің мағыналық топтары мен лексика-грамматикалық категориялары кестелер арқылы көрсетілген. Бұл тілдің негізгі заңдылықтары мен ережелерін жеңіл игеруге мүмкіндік жасайды. Ағылшын тілінде сөйлеу дағдысын дамыту мақсатында оқу құралында әр тақырыпқа арналған лексика-грамматикалық жаттығулар мен тест берілген.

© «Жәңгір хан атындағы Батыс Қазақстан аграрлық-техникалық университеті» РМҚ, 2015

Алғы сөз

Қазақстан Республикасының Президенті Н.Ә.Назарбаевтың Қазақстан халқына жолдауында «Үш тілің тұғырың» деп үш тілге - қазақ тілі, орыс тілі, ағылшын тіліне назар аудару туралы айтып өтті. Ағылшын тілі - бүгінде халықаралық қатынастың, ғылым мен техниканың, бизнес пен журналистиканың барлық салаларында кеңінен қолданылып келе жатқан тілдердің қатарына жатады.

Ағылшын тілін оқып-үйренемін деушілердің саны күннен-күнге көбеюде. Ағылшын тілін оқып үйрену үшін, қазақ тілі негізінде құрастырылған бұл оқу- әдістемелік құралы жоғары оқу орындары қазақ бөлімі студенттеріне және өз бетімен ағылшын тілін үйренушілерге ұсынылып отыр. Оқу-әдістемелік құралы ағылшын тілі бағдарламасының талаптарына сай жазылған.

Оқу әдістемелік құралының мақсаты ағылшын тілінде оқудың негізгі ережелерімен таныстыру, оқу бағдарламасы көлемінде сөйлеу, жазу, оқу, аудару дағдыларына үйрету.

Оқу құралы екі бөлімнен тұрады. Әр сабақтың құрамы негізінен келесі түрде:

1. Грамматикалық тақырыптар мен ережелер. Лексика-грамматикалық жаттығулар
2. Оқу ережесіне сай жаттығулар мен тест. Өткен материалдарды пысықтау.

Берілген грамматикалық тапсырмалар негізінен студенттің тақырыпты қалай түсінгендігін тексеруді және өтілетін функционалдық үлгілерді қолдануға үйретуді мақсат етеді. Жоғарыда көрсетілген мақсаттарға жету үшін әр сабақты белсенді түрде меңгеруге арналған сөздер мен жалпы лексика-грамматикалық терминдер және олардың қолданылуын бекітуге арналған жаттығулар мен тест берілген. Оқу құралының арнайы бөлімі грамматикалық материалды қайталауға және ғылыми-әдебиет көздеріне тән кейбір қиын грамматикалық құбылыстар мен синтаксистік құрылымдарды жаттықтыруға арналған.

Оқу құралы қазақ аудиториясының студенттеріне көмегін тигізері сөзсіз.

Part 1. Морфология (грекше: morphе - форма; тұлға және logos - ілім) - сөз туралы грамматикалық ілім. Морфология сөздің грамматикалық мағынасын қарастырады, ол сөздердің қай сөз табына жататынын, сөз таптарының жасалу жолдары мен түрленуін сөз етеді. Сөздердің қай сөз табына жататыны төмендегі белгілері бойынша ажыратылады:

- а) жалпы мағынасы;
- ә) мағына тудырушы қасиеті (префикстер мен жұрнақтар);
- б) грамматикалық көрсеткіштері (артикль, предлог және жалғаулар);
- в) сөйлемдегі атқаратын қызметіне байланысты.

Ағылшын тілінде сөз таптарын жүйелегенде, қазақ тіліндегідей үш топқа бөлуге болады:

- а) Notional words - Атау сөздер (толық мағыналы сөздер);
- ә) Auxiliary words - Көмекші сөздер (толық мағынасы жоқ сөздер);
- б) Interjection - Одағай сөздер.

Ағылшын және қазақ тілдерінде атау сөздерге зат есім, сын есім, сан есім, есімдік, етістік, үстеу жатады. Атау сөздер айналадағы шындықты (зат, белгі, сан, үдеріс т. б.) бейнелеп, олардың атауы ретінде қолданылады және олар толық сөйлем мүшесі бола алады.

Көмекші сөздер атауыш сөздермен себелесіп келіп қана жұмсалады. Көмекші сөздерге ағылшын тілінде көмекші есімдер, шылаулар (септеулік, жалғаулық, демеулік), көмекші етістіктер, предлогтар, сол сияқты зат есімнің көрсеткіші болып табылатын артикльдер жатады. Қазақ тілінде көмекші сөздерге шылау сөздер, көмекші есім, көмекші етістіктер жатады.

Одағай сөздер сөйлемдегі қолданылуымен де, берер мағынасымен де барлық сөз таптарына ұқсамайтын ерекшелікке ие. Бұлар белгілі бір ұғымды білдіре алмайтын, сөйлемде ешқандай сөйлем мүшесі қызметін атқармайтын, тек адамның көңіл күйі, ішкі сезімін ғана білдіретін сөздер. Сонымен, сөз таптары дегеніміз - грамматикалық жағынан ыңғайлас келетін сөздердің тобы. Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі сөз таптары (Parts of speech) төмендегідей.

Ағылшын тілі: The Noun - Зат есім / The Adjective - Сын есім / The Numeral - Сан есім / The Pronoun - Есімдік / The Verb - Етістік / The Adverb - Үстеу / The Conjunction - Шылау / The Interjection - Одағай / The Preposition

- Предлог.

Қазақ тілі: Зат есім / Сын есім / Сан есім / Есімдік / Етістік / Үстеу / Шылау / Одағай / Модаль сөздер / Еліктеуіш сөздер. Екі тілдегі айырмашылық сол - қазақ тілінде Предлог, Артикль жоқ, ағылшын тілінде Модаль сөздері мен Еліктеуіш сөздер болмайды. Енді әр сөз табын жеке-жеке қарастырайық.

Зат есім (The NOUN)

Ағылшын және қазақ тілдерінде **зат есім** - заттардың атын, нәрселерді, табиғат пен қоғамдық құбылыстарды, уақиғаларды, ұғымдар мен түсініктерді кең мағынада білдіретін сөз табы.

Екі тілдегі зат есімді жеке сөз табы ретінде танытатын үш белгісі (морфологиялық, семантикалық, синтаксистік) болады. Енді осы үш белгіні сипаттап көрейік.

Morphological description of the noun

(Зат есімнің морфологиялық сипаты)

Зат есімнің морфологиялық сипатын түсіну үшін зат есімнің құрылымын, жасалу тәсілін, түрлену жүйесін талдау керек. Алдымен зат есімнің құрылымына тоқталайық.

The structure of the noun

(Зат есімнің құрылымы)

Ағылшын тілінде зат есімдер құрылымы жағынан **Simple** (Жалаң), **Derivative** (Туынды), **Compound** (Күрделі) болып бөлінсе, **қазақ тілінде** олардың **екі түрі (Жалаң, Күрделі)** болады.

Simple nouns

(Жалаң зат есімдер)

Ағылшын тіліндегі **Simple** (Жалаң) зат есімдер тек қана түбірден тұрады. **Қазақ** тіліндегі **жалаң** зат есімдер екі салаға (**түбір** зат есімдер, **туынды** зат есімдер) бөлінеді. Түбір зат есімдер тек түбір сөзден тұрса, туынды зат есімдер зат есім, сын есім, етістік, сан есімдерге жұрнақтар жалғану арқылы жасалады.

Simple Noun (English)

a book - кітап

a week - апта

a son - ұл

Жалаң зат есім (Kazakh)

қыз - a girl

би - a dance

қой - a sheep

Derivative nouns

(Туынды зат есімдер)

Қазақ тілінде **туынды** зат есімдер, жоғарыда айтылғандай, түбір сөздерге жұрнақтар жалғануы арқылы жасалса, **ағылшын** тіліндегі **туынды**

(**Derivative**) зат есімдер - зат есім, сын есім, етістік, сан есімдерге жұрнақтар мен префикстердің жалғануы арқылы жасалады.

Compound nouns

(Күрделі зат есімдер)

Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі күрделі зат есімдер біріккен зат есімдер, қосарланған зат есімдер, құрама зат есімдер, қысқарған зат есімдерден құралады. Кесте түрінде қарастырайық.

Comparative chart of English and Kazakh compound nouns
(Ағылшын және қазақ тілдеріндегі күрделі зат есімдердің
салыстырмалы кестесі)

Ағылшын тілі	
Түрлері	Мысал
Зат есім+зат есім Зат есім+үстеу Сын есім+зат есім Есімше+зат есім Есімдік+зат есім Зат есім+предлог+зат есім Етістік+есімдік+үстеу Сын есім+етістік +үстеу Үстеу+етістік Үстеу+зат есім Етістік+үстеу	airmail, seaman looker-on, hander-on blackboard, blackbird boiling-point he- goat, she-wolf mother-in-law hand-me- down merry-go-round outgo, off shoot by- law, overcoat feedback
Қазақ тілі	
Түрлері	Мысал
Зат есім+зат есім (біріккен) Зат есім+зат есім (кіріккен) Зат есім+зат есім (қосарланған) Зат есім+зат есім (сөз тіркесі) Зат есім+зат есім (қысқарған сөз)	Жанбота, итбалық қайынапа, белбеу ата-ана, жауын-шашын ауа райы, сабак кестесі ҚР, ҚазҰПУ, ҚазҰТУ

Lexical and grammatical descriptions of English and Kazakh nouns
(Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі зат есімдердің лексикалық-
грамматикалық сипаты)

Зат есімдер заттық ұғымды білдіріп, әртүрлі семантикалық категорияларды қамтиды. Қазақ тілінде зат есімдердің нақтылық және абстрактілік, **жалпылық** және жалқылық, даралық және жинақтылық, жекелік және топтық семантикалық категориялары болады. Ағылшын тілінде зат есімдердің **Countable** (Саналатын) және **Uncountable** (Саналмайтын), **Proper** (Жалқы) және **Common** (Жалпы), **Concrete** (Нақтылық) және **Abstract** (Абстрактілік), **Animate** (Жанды) және **Inanimate** (Жансыз), сияқты семантикалық категориялары болады. Енді екі тілдегі әрбір топтарды жеке-жеке талдайық. Ағылшын тіліндегі зат есімдер, жоғарыда айтылғандай, лексикалық мағынасына қарай, қазақ тіліндегідей **жалқы** және **жалпы есімдерге** бөлінеді.

Common nouns
(Жалпы есімдер)

Ағылшын және қазақ тілдеріндегі жалпы есімдерге жан-жануарлардың, заттардың, ұғымдардың, құбылыстардың, халықтардың жалпы атаулары жатады. Басқа сөзбен айтқанда, жалпы зат есімдерге тілдегі әр алуан деректі және дерексіз заттар мен ұғымдарды білдіретін зат есімдер жатады. Жалпы зат есімдер жекеше және көпше түрлерге өзгере береді (ағылшын тіліндегі саналмайтын зат есімдерден басқалары).

Мысалы, *a river* – *өзен* *a town* — *қала* *rivers* — *өзендер* *towns* — *қалалар*.

Proper Nouns

(Жалқы есімдер)

Жалқы есімдер - әдетте, бір затты өзі сияқты көптеген біртектес заттардың арасынан ерекшелеп, жекелеп айтуға байланысты жұмсалатын зат есімдер болып табылады. Ағылшын және қазақ тілдеріндегі жалқы есімдер тек қана **жекеше тұлғада** қолданылады. Және оларға есептік сан есімдер анықтауыштық қызметте тіркесе алмайды. (*Two Almaty* - Екі Алматы немесе *Six Asel* - Алты Әсел деп айтуға болмайды). Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі жалқы есімдерге адамдардың, заттардың, құбылыстардың, жануарлардың жеке атаулары жатады.

Countable nouns

(Саналатын зат есімдер)

Ағылшын тілінде зат есімдер **саналатын** және **саналмайтын** болып екіге бөлінеді. **Саналатын зат есімдерге** санауға келетін белгілі бір орын мен заттардың атауы жатады. Олардың алдына **a/an, the** артикльдері қойылады.

Мысалы, *a bed* - **төсек**, *a pen* — **қалам**, *the bird* - **құс** т.с.с. Ағылшын тіліндегі саналатын зат есімдер жекеше және көпше түрде қолданылады, олардың көпше түрі **-s/-es** жалғаулықтарының жалғануы арқылы жасалады: *a banana* - *bananas*, *a friend* - *friends*, *a beach* - *beaches*. Саналатын зат есімдермен келген етістік олардың жекеше және көпше түріне байланысты өзгереді. Мысалы: *Where is my pen? Where are my pens?* Саналатын зат есімдер сан есімдермен де қолданылады. **Мысалы, *two bags, three girls*.**

Ескерту. Зат есімнің көпше түрінің жасалуы туралы толық мағлұматты зат есімнің көпше түрі тақырыбында ала аласыздар.

Uncountable nouns

(Саналмайтын зат есімдер)

Ағылшын тіліндегі саналмайтын зат есімдер **қазақ тіліндегі көптік мәнді** зат есімдермен мағыналас. Ағылшын тіліндегі саналмайтын зат есімдер тек жекеше түрде қолданылады, олардың алдына артикль қойылмайды. Саналмайтын зат есімдермен келген **етістіктер тек жекеше түрде** қолданылады. Мысалы, *Here is some information for him*.

Сонымен қатар **олар сан есімдермен қолданылмайды**. Мысалы, *some information*. Ағылшын тіліндегі кейбір зат есімдерге **-s** жалғауы жалғанғанымен, олар **саналмайтын зат есім** болып есептеледі де, **етістік жекеше түрде** қолданылады. Мысалы: *The news is bad today*. Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі зат есімнің бұл категорияларының өзіндік ерекшеліктері бар - олар затты топтап атайды, сонымен қатар оларға практикалық тілде жалғаулар жалғанбайды. Оларға төмендегі зат есімдер жатады:

а) жаратылыс құбылыстарының атаулары:

rain - жаңбыр, *snow* — қар, *snow storm* - қарлы боран

ә) ұсақ заттар, ұнысқан майда заттар мен үгітінді заттардың атаулары:

flour - ұй, *hair* - иаш, *dust* - шаң, *wool* - жүн

б) сұйық заттардың аттары:

tea - май, oil - сұйық май, sour milk - айран, milk - сүт, coffee - кофе

в) газ тектес ұшатын заттардың аттары:

steam - бу, air - ауа, smoke - түтін, fog - туман

г) дерексіз ұғымдарды білдіретін заттардың атаулары:

mind - ақыл, ой, sense - сезім, sorrow - қайғы, қасірет, honesty - адалдық

г) өздігінен табиғи бөлшектенбейтін кесек заттардың атаулары:
gold - алтын, *silver* - күміс, *steel* - құрыш.

Ескерту. Ағылшын тілінде кейбір саналмайтын зат есімдер кейде саналатын зат есімдер ретінде де қолданылады, бірақ олардың мағыналары басқаша болып өзгереді. Мысалы,

Our boss needs some **paper** to write on. — Біздің басшымызға жазу үшін **қағаз** қажет. My father bought **a paper** to read. — Менің әкем **газет** сатып алды.

Can you lend me **an iron**? - Үтігіңізді бере тұрмайсыз ба?

There is much **iron** in Kazakhstan. - Қазақстанда **темір** көп.

Енді саналатын және саналмайтын зат есімдерді салыстырып көрейік.

	Countable nouns (Саналатын зат есім)	Uncountable nouns (Саналмайтын зат есім)
	My granddaughter eats an apple every day. - Менің немерем күнде алма жейді . She likes apples . - Ол алманы жақсы көреді. Apple сөзі саналатын зат есім, зат есімнің жекеше түрі (an apple) және көпше түрі (apples) , оларды бір, екі, үш деп санай аламыз. Мысалы, Give me three apples , please.	She eats cheese every day. - Ол күнде ірімшік жейді. She likes cheese . - Ол ірімшікті жақсы көреді. Cheese сөзі - саналмайтын зат есім. Саналмайтын зат есімнің тек бір формасы , яғни жекеше түрі (cheese) болады. Оларды бір, екі, үш деп санай алмаймыз, яғни One cheese, two cheese деп айтпаймыз.
	Саналатын зат есімнің алды- на a/an/the артикльдері, some қолданылады (a/the student, a/ the table, an/the umbrella, a/ the car, a/the house, the car(s), the boy(s), the teacher(s), the university(ies), the key(s), some shoes, some letters, some books).	Саналмайтын зат есімнің алдында a/ан артикльдері қолданылмайды бірақ a...of, some қолдананылады: (a piece of music, a cup of tea, a bar of chocolate, a piece of cheese, a bowl of rice, a can of oil, a bottle of milk, a game of tennis, a glass of water, a jar of honey, a loaf of bread, a piece of paper, a piece of wood, a slice of

		cake, a chunk of ice, a lump of sugar, some paper, some information, some news, some bread, some money, some salt)
	Саналатын зат есімдер же- кеше түрде жеке өздері қолданылмайды, олар a/an/ the артикульдерімен келеді. Мыса- лы, I want an orange.	Саналмайтын зат есімдер жеке тек өздері ғана қолданыла береді. Мысалы, I drink tea every day. Can you hear music ?
	Көпше түрдегі саналатын зат есімдермен some, any есімдіктері қолданылады. Some көбінесе болымды сөйлемде, ал any болымсыз, сұраулы сөйлемдерде қолданылады. Мысалы, Some of these books are quite useful. - Мына кітаптардың кейбіреуі өте пайдалы. Do you have any books about Kazakhstan? — Сізде Қазақстан туралы кітап бар ма?	Саналмайтын зат есімдермен де some, any есімдіктері қолданылады. Some көбінесе болымды сөйлемде, ал any болымсыз, сұраулы сөйлемдерде қолданылады. Мысалы, My mother gave me some advice . - Менің анам маған біраз кеңес берді. She hasn't got any money . - Оның ақшасы жоқ. We haven't got any food . - Бізде ешқандай тамақ қалмапты.
	Саналатын зат есімдердің көпше түрінде many сөзі қолданылады. Мысалы, There are many cars in the street. - Көшеде көп машина бар. Did you buy many books ? - Сіз көп кітап сатып алдыңыз ба?	Ал саналмайтын зат есімдермен much сөзі қолданылады. Мысалы, There is much snow in the street. - Көшеде қар көп. Did they buy much butter ? - Олар көп май сатып алды ма? I haven't got much luggage . - Мен- де көп жүк жоқ.
	A lot of (көп) сөзі санала- тын және саналмайтын зат есімдермен қолданылады. They bought a lot of books . - Олар көп кітап сатып алды.	They bought a lot of food . - Олар көп тамақ сатып алды. - Do you drink a lot of (much) tea ? - Сіз шайды көп ішесіз бе? - I don't drink much tea . - Мен көп шай ішпеймін.
	Саналатын зат есімдерінің көпше түрінде (a) few сөзі қолданылады. Мысалы, She's got a few friends , so she's not lonely. - Оның біраз	Ал саналмайтын зат есімдермен (a) little сөзі қолданылады. Мысалы, We have a little money , so we are not poor. - Біздің біраз

достары бар, сондықтан ол жалғыз емес. He's got few friends, so he's lonely. - Оның достары өте аз, сондықтан ол жалғыз. <i>Ескерту.</i> a few сөзі - аздаған, біраз, бірақ көп емес деген мағынада қолданылады. Ал few сөзі - өте аз (жоққа тән) деген мағынаны білдіреді.	ақшамыз бар, біз кедей емеспіз. They have little money. They are very poor. - Олардың ақшасы өте аз. Олар кедей. <i>Ескерту.</i> a little сөзі - аздаған, біраз, бірақ көп емес деген мағынада қолданылады. Ал little сөзі - өте аз (жоққа тән) деген мағынаны білдіреді.
--	--

Тақырыпты пысықтау үшін жаттығуларды орындаңыз.

1.1. Your mother is visiting you. Rewrite the questions you ask your mother, using **a few** or a little instead of **some**. (**Сіздің анаңыз қонаққа келді. Some сөзінің орнына a few, a little сөздерін қолданып, сұраулы сөйлемді қайтадан жазыңыз**).

1. Would you like some tea? Would you like a little tea?
Would you like some milk in your tea? .
- 2.....Would you like some more sugar in your tea?
- 3.....Would you like some biscuits?
- 4.....Can I bring you some cake?
- 5.....Shall I make you some sandwiches?.....

1.2. Put in little/a little/few/a few (Көп нүктенің орнына **little/a little/few/a few** сөздерін қойыңыз).

- 1.....We'd like to practice our Kazakh more but we have opportunity.
- 2.....There was traffic, so I arrived earlier than I expected.
- 3.....There was food in the fridge. It was nearly empty.
4. The bus service isn't very good at night - there are ... buses after 9 o'clock.
5. 'When..... did your sister go out?' ' minutes ago.'
6. 'Would..... you like some soup?'- 'Yes, , please.

1.3. Complete the sentences. Use **a lot of** with one of these words: traffic accidents, fun, books, interesting things. (**Берілген сөздердің алдына a lot of- 't'x қолданыңыз**).

- 1..... It took them a long time to drive here. There was
- 2.....I enjoyed my visit to the museum. I saw.....

- 3.....My sister likes reading. She has
- 4.....The road is very dangerous. There are
- 5.....They enjoyed their holiday. They had

1.4. Complete the sentences. Use *much* or *many* + one of these words: times, time, people, luggage, countries, journals. (Берілген сөздердің алдына *much* немесе *many-ңі* қолданыңыз).

- 1.....They know London very well. They've been there
- 2..... 'Have you got ?' No, only this bag.'
- 3..... He doesn't read much. He hasn't got
- 4..... I haven't lived here very long, so I don't know
- 5..... Quick! We must hurry up. We haven't got.....
- 6..... Does your daughter travel a lot? Has she been to.....?

1.5. Put the correct word in the following sentences (Берілген сөздердің дұрысын таңдап, көп нүктенің орнына қойыңыз).

- 1..... (pieces/ slices/ litres) I've just put forty of petrol in the car.
- 2..... (glass /slice/piece) Would you give me a of milk, please?
- 3..... (cups/glasses/spoonfuls) I take two of sugar in my tea.
- 4..... (piece/cup/slice) I'd like a of tea, please.
- 5..... (spoonful/piece/cup) That was a difficult of homework.
- 6..... (glass/piece/slice) We need a of information.
- 7..... (slice/kilo/piece) I'd like half a of coffee, please.
- 8..... (bottles/cups/ pieces) My mother gave me two of advice.
- 9..... (slice/piece/bottle) Could you buy a of milk at the shops?

Concrete nouns

(Деректі зат есімдер)

Көзбен көріп, қолмен ұстап тануға боларлықтай нақтылы заттармен байланысты ұғымдарды білдіретін зат есімдер ағылшын және қазақ тілдерінде деректі зат есімдер болады. Мысалы, **water** - су, **iron** - темір, **street** - көше, **girl** - қыз.

Abstract nouns

(Дерексіз зат есімдер)

Ағылшын, қазақ тілдеріндегі нақтылы затты, нәрсені білдірмей, тек қана сапаның, жай-күйдің, іс-әрекет, қозғалыстың, құбылыстың атын дерексіз зат ретінде білдіретін, заттық мағыналары тек ойлау қабілеті, кейбір сезім мүшелері арқылы топшыланып сезілетін, ұғылынатын сөздердің тобын дерексіз зат есімдер дейміз. Мысалы, **kindness** - мейірімділік, **fear** - қорқыныш, **conversation** - әңгіме.

Екі тілде де дерексіз зат есімдердің өзіне тән грамматикалық белгісі болады. Олар есептік сан есімдермен тіркесе алмайды (two kindness - екі мейірімділік, three fear - үш қорқыныш деп айтылмайды), сонымен қатар олар жекеше тұлғада жұмсалады. Кейбір дерексіз зат есімдер көптік жалғау қабылдап, басқа ұғымды білдіреді. Ағылшын және қазақ тілдеріндегі зат есімдердің мағыналық топтарын кесте түрінде көрсетейік.

Classes of English nouns (Зат есімнің мағыналық топтары)

Proper nouns	<i>Abai, Dickens, Astana, London, Sunday, August</i>
Common nouns	<i>man, woman, family, cotton, friendship, government</i>
Concrete nouns	<i>a bird, a cat, a flower, police, sugar, gold, a house</i>
Abstract nouns	<i>strength, linguistics, weather, summer, direction</i>
Countable nouns	<i>a desk, a student, a teacher, a boy, a son, a daughter</i>
Uncountable nouns	<i>business, behavior, progress, money, furniture, advice, news, water, life, fun, happiness, accommodation, weather</i>
Animate nouns	<i>an actor, a worker, a fish, a dog, a horse, a cat</i>
Inanimate nouns	<i>a car, a telephone, a building, a park, a watch</i>

Classes of Kazakh nouns (Қазақ тіліндегі зат есімнің мағыналық топтары)

Жалпы зат есім Common noun	<i>жер, кітап, цалам, арыстан, піл, қарлығаш, құмырсқа, боран, дауыл, сел, соғыс, шабыс</i>
Жалқы зат есім Proper noun	<i>Абай Құнанбаев, Сабыр, Зәмзәм, Қазақстан, Астана, Алматы, Алатау тауы</i>
Деректі зат есім Concrete noun	<i>қыз, ұл, көше, гул, алма, ише, парта, тақта, сәбіз, сарымсақ</i>
Дерексіз зат есім Abstract noun	<i>арман, ой, ақыл, сезім, қуаныш, өтініш, батырлық, ептілік, шыдамдылық, гарыш</i>
Жанды зат есім Animate noun	<i>адам, бала, әже, әпке, кісі, ақын, жұмысшы, жігіт, бойжеткен</i>
Жансыз зат есім Inanimate noun	<i>ағаш, гүл, ғимарат, мемлекет, теледидар, телефон, құмыра</i>
Заттық зат есім Material (things)	<i>алтын, күміс, ағаш, нан, сүт, ет, күріш, су, көмір</i>
Жинақтау зат есімі Collective noun	<i>адамзат, ата-ана, құс, жануар, жеміс, азық-түлік, туган-туыс, табиғат, отбасы</i>

Plural form of the noun

(Зат есімнің көпше түрі)

Қазақ тілінде зат есімнің көпше түрі оның жекеше түрлеріне **–лар/ -лер/- тар/-тер/-дар/-дер** көптік жалғауының жалғануы арқылы жасалса, ағылшын тілінде зат есімнің көпше түрі көбіне жекеше түрдегі зат есімдерге **-s/-es** жалғауларының жалғануы арқылы жасалады. Олардың оқылуы әртүрлі болады:

а) **-s** жалғауы дауыстылар мен ұяң дауыссыздардан соң **[z]** болып оқылады:

a toy - ойыншық toys [biz] - ойыншықтар

a girl - қыз girls [дз:1г] - қыздар

Қазақ тілінде егер зат есім жіңішке дауыстылар мен ұяң дауыссыздарға аяқталса, онда зат есімге **-лер,-дер** жалғаулықтары жалғанады: әже - әжелер кеме - кемелер

күн - күндер егіз - егіздер

ә) ағылшын тілінде **-s** жалғауы қатаң дауыссыздардан соң **[s]** болып оқылады:

a student - студент students [stju:dsnts] - студенттер a map - карта maps [maeps] - карталар

Қазақ тілінде жуан дауыстылар мен қатаң дауыссыздарға аяқталған зат есімдерге **-лар, -тар, -дар** жалғаулықтары жалғанады: ата - аталар ана - аналар

қазақ - қазақтар адам - адамдар

б) ағылшын тілінде **x** әрпі мен **ss, sh, tch, ch** тіркестеріне аяқталған зат есімдерге **-es** жалғауы жалғанады да, **[iz]** болып оқылады:

a match - сіріңке matches [meetjiz] - сіріңкелер

a box - қорап boxes ['boksiz] - қораптар

a dress - көйлек dresses ['dresiz] - көйлектер

a bench - орындық benches ['bentjiz] - орындықтар

в) ағылшын тіліндегі күрделі зат есімдерде көптік жалғауы негізгі зат есімге жалғанады:

a father-in-law fathers-in-law

a daughter-in-law daughters-in-law

г) ағылшын тілінде жекеше түрдегі зат есім **y** әрпіне аяқталып, оның алдында дауыссыз тұрса, **-es** жалғауы жалғанады да, **y** әрпі **i** әрпіне өзгереді:

a city - қала cities [sitiz] - қалалар

a baby - бөбек babies [beibiz] — бөбектер

Ескерту. Егер зат есім **y** әрпіне аяқталып, оның алдында дауысты тұрса, **y** әрпі өзгермейді:

a toy - ойыншық toys [toiz] - ойыншықтар

a boy - ер бала boys [boiz] - ер балалар

ғ) ағылшын тілінде **кейбір** зат есімдердің көпше түрі **түбір сөздегі дауыстының** өзгеруі арқылы жасалады, ал қазақ тілінде бұндай құбылыс болмайды:

a man — ер адам	men - ер адамдар
a woman - әйел	women - әйелдер
a foot - аяқ	feet - аяқтар
a tooth - тіс	teeth - тістер

д) ағылшын тілінде егер зат есім **f** әрпіне және **fe** әріп тіркесіне аяқталса, оған **-s/-es** жалғаулары жалғанып, **f** пен **fe** v-ға өзгереді, ал қазақ тілінде мұндай ереже болмайды:

a leaf - жапырақ	leaves - жапырақтар
a knife - пышақ	knives - пышақтар

Ескерту. Кейбір зат есімдер **f** пен **fe** әріп тіркесіне аяқталғанымен, тек **-s** жалғауы жалғанып, **[s]** болып оқылады: roof - шатыр, үйдің төбесі roofs - шатырлар, үйлердің төбесі handkerchief - бет орамал handkerchiefs - бет орамалдар

е) ағылшын тілінде егер жекеше түрдегі зат есімдер **o** әрпіне аяқталса, оның көпше түрі екі жолмен жасалады:

1) егер **o** әрпінің алдында дауыссыз дыбыс тұрса, онда зат есімге **-es** жалғауы жалғанады:

tomato - қызанақ	tomatoes - қызанақтар
potato - картоп	potatoes - картоптар
hero - батыр	heroes - батырлар

2) кейде **o** әрпінің алдында дауысты тұрса, онда зат есімге **-s** жалғауы жалғанады:

radio - радио	radios - радиолар
studio - студия	studios - студиялар
zoo - хайуанаттар паркі	zoos - хайуанаттар парктері

ж) ағылшын тілінде кейбір грек және латын тілдерінен енген зат есімдер сол тілдегі көпше түрі_н сақтайды:

analysis - талдау	analyses - талдау
basis - негіз	bases - негіз
criterion - белгі	criteria - белгілер

з) ағылшын тілінде кейбір зат есімдер тек көпше түрде қолданылады да, қазақ тіліне жекеше түрдегі зат есім ретінде аударылады:

trousers - шалбар	socks - шұлық
scissors - қайшы	spectacles - көз әйнек
goods - тауар	spirits - көңіл күй
clothes - киім	savings - жинақталған қор

и) ағылшын, қазақ тілдерінде кейбір зат есімдер тек жекеше түрде қолданылады, әдетте, олар саналмайтын зат есімдер болып табылады:

advice - ақыл, кеңес	alphabet - әліпби
information - хабар	bedding - төсек-орын

weather - аяа райы	clothing - киім
knowledge - білім	furniture - жиһаз
air - аяа	luggage - жүк
hair — шаш	scenery — көрініс
tea - шай	paper - қағаз
freedom - бостандық	sleep - ұйқы
anger - ашу	help - көмек
football - футбол	time - уақыт
health - денсаулық	hope - үміт

к) ағылшын және қазақ тілдерінде кейбір зат есімдер жекеше және көпше түрінде бірдей тұлғада қолданылады:

a deer - бұғы	three deer - үш бұғы
a fish - балық	five fish - бес балық
a sheep - қой	four sheep - төрт қой
an offspring - ұрпақ	many offspring - көп ұрпақ
a Swiss - швед	ten Swiss - он швед

a Chinese - қытай many Chinese - көп қытай

a means - қаражат, тәсіл a lot of means - көп қаражат, көп тәсіл. Қазақ тілінде бұндай құбылыс көптік мағынаның синтаксистік тәсіл арқылы берілуі, яғни көптік мағынаның сөз тіркесі арқылы қолданылуы болып табылады. Енді ағылшын және қазақ тіліндегі зат есімнің көпше түрінің жасалуының кейбір ерекшеліктеріне көңіл бөлейік. Төмендегі мысалдардан екі тілдегі көптік жалғаулы зат есімдердің дыбыс үндестігінің кейбір ұқсастықтарын байқауымызға болады:

а) егер ағылшын тілінде сөз дауысты және ұяң дауыссыздарға аяқталса, онда -s жалғауы ұяң болып оқылады. Ал қазақ тілінде сөз дауыстыға, ұяң дауыссыздарға аяқталса, онда көптік -лар/-лер/-дар/-дер жалғанады. **Ағылшын тілі Қазақтілі**

day - days	көше - көшелер
bag — bags	бала - балалар

ә) ағылшын тілінде сөз қатаң дауыссызға аяқталса, онда жалғаулар қатаң болып оқылады, ал қазақ тілінде сөз қатаң дауыссызға аяқталса, көптік **-тар/-тер** жалғаулары жалғанады.

Ағылшын тілі	Қазақтілі
student - students ['stju:dsnts]	қарт + тар
cap - caps [kaps]	терек + тер

Exercises

(Жаттығулар)

1.6. Give the plural forms of the nouns and write them into three columns according to their pronunciation: [s], [z], [iz]. (**Зат есімдерді көпше түрге өзгертіп, оларды айтылу ережесіне ([s]; [z]; [iz]) байланысты үш бағанаға орналастырыңыз.**)

Dog, shop, box, tree, chemist, car, day, fox, bottle, check, house, baby,

noun, hero, student, night, animal, present, mistake, knife, cargo, accident, loaf, lady, light, face, hand, way, glass, book, dish, fish, city, factory, key, tomato, chief, **Write plural forms of the nouns and explain their formation.** (Зат есімдердің көпше түрін беріп, жасалу жолдарын түсіндіріңіз).

Man, woman, child, foot, deer, sheep, tooth, mouse, goose, baby, donkey, brush, box, pencil, half, story, ship, country, computer, university, building, office, hero.

1.7. Classify the nouns according to their use: a) as singular; b) as plural;

ә) **as singular and plural.** (Зат есімдердің қолдануына байланысты: а) жекеше тұлғада; б) көпше тұлғада; с) жекеше әрі көпше тұлғада топтаңыздар).

Alphabet, information, bedding, clothing, furniture, fish, shoes, trousers, pyjamas, machinery, offspring, tongs, bellows, poetry, physics, statistics, gymnastics, spectacles, thanks, cattle, billiards, crowd, data, family, crew, outskirts, surroundings, thanks, clothes, contents, goods, jeans, means, army, audience, class, company, group, media, press, public, staff, rubbish, scenery, health, traffic, permission.

Case

Ағылшын тілінде зат есімнің септелуі қазақ тіліндегі **зат есімнің септелуінен** сан жағынан өзгеше. Қазақ тілінде жеті септік болса, ал ағылшын тілінде зат есім екі септікке түрленеді: Common case (қазақ тіліндегі Атау септігіне сәйкес) және Possessive Case (қазақ тіліндегі Ілік септігіне сәйкес келеді). Сонымен, ағылшын тіліндегі Common case-ті шартты түрде «Атау септік» деп аламыз, ал Possessive Case **-ті** «Ілік септік» деп аламыз. **Common case** - жалғаусыз септік. Мысалы: *a manager* - басшы, басқарушы.

Ескерту. Ағылшын тілінде **Common case** (атау септік) зат есімдер **of/to/by/with** предлогтарымен тіркесе келіп, қазақ тіліндегі кейбір септіктерге сәйкес келеді.

1. *Ағылшын тіліндегі of* предлогымен тіркескен зат есімдер қазақ тілінде **ілік септігіне** сәйкес келеді. Мысалы: *The house of my friend.* - Менің досымның үйі. (кімнің үйі?) *The leg of the table.* - Үстелдің аяғы. (Ненің аяғы?)

2. **To** предлогымен тіркесе келген зат есім қазақ тіліндегі барыс септігіне сәйкес келеді. Мысалы, *She showed the composition to the teacher.* - Ол шығарманы оқытушыға (кімге?) көрсетті.

Сонымен қатар ағылшын тілінде зат есім **етістік** пен **тура толықтауыштың** ортасында келсе, онда ол қазақ тілінде **барыс септігіне** сәйкес келеді.

Мысалы: *She showed the teacher the composition.* - Ол шығармасын оқытушыға (кімге?) көрсетті.

3. **By** предлогымен қолданылған зат есім қазақ тіліндегі **комектес септікке** сәйкес келеді. Мысалы: *She usually washes children's clothes by hand.*

- Ол әдетте балалардың киімін қолмен жуады. (Немен?)

4. Ағылшын тіліндегі зат есім **with** предлогымен қолданылғанда, қазақ тілінде **көмектес** септікке сәйкес келеді. Мысалы: *I opened the door with a key.*

- Мен есікті кілтпен аштым. (Немен?)

Possessive case

Ағылшын тіліндегі зат есімнің тәуелденуі. **Possessive case** қазақ тіліндегі **Ілік септікпен сәйкес** келеді. Зат есім сөйлемде өзінен кейінгі зат есімнің анықтауышы болып, **whose? — кімдікі? кімнің? кімдердің?** деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Ағылшын тіліндегі бұл септіктегі *жанды, жансыз заттарды; жинақтау мағынасындағы құн, салмақ, арақашықтық, уақыт ұғымдарын; теңіздердің, планеталардың атауларын* білдіретін зат есімдерге **дәйекше** (апостроф') және **-s** жалғауы жалғануы арқылы жасалса, қазақ тілінде **-тың, -дың, -тің, -дің, -ның, -нің, -лық, -лік** т.с.с жалғаулықтары арқылы жасалады.

Aidana's sister. - Айдананың сіңлісі.

The cow's legs. - Сиырдың аяқтары.

The family's pride. - Отбасының мақтанышы.

People's honour. - Халықтың намысы.

Eight hours' working day. - Сегіз сағаттық жұмыс күні.

At the day's distance. - Бір күндік жол.

A week's leave. - Бір апталық демалыс.

The sun's ray. - Күннің сәулесі.

The Venera's light. - Шолпан жұлдызының жарығы.

The Aral Sea's ecology. - Арал теңізінің табиғаты.

Ағылшын тілінде егер затқа (нәрсеге) екі адам иелік ететін болса, тәуелді септіктің **дәйекшесі** және **-s** жалғауы соңғы зат есімге жалғанады, қазақ тілінде де жалғаулық соңғы зат есімге жалғанады:

Marat and Kasym's flat. - Марат пен Қасымның пәтері.

Ағылшын тілінде көпше түрде қолданылатын көптік жалғаусыз зат есімдерге тәуелді септікте **дәйекше** және **-s** жалғанады:

Children's mother. - Балалардың анасы.

Егер көптік жалғаулы зат есім ілік септікте тұрса, оған тек **дәйекше** қойылады да, анықталушы зат есім артикльсіз жазылады:

The students' tests are good. - Студенттердің бақылау жұмыстары жақсы.

Gender

(Зат есімнің род категориясы)

Қазақ тілінде род категориясы болмайды. **He, she, it** қазақ тіліне тек **ол** болып аударылады. Ағылшын тілінде **he** ерлер туралы айтқанда қолданылады: *boy scout, man student; male nurse, he - goat, he - elephant*.

She, керісінше, **әйелдер, қыздар, бикелер** туралы айтқанда қолданылады: *she-goat, she - elephant, girlfriend*. Кейде **-ess** жалғаулары әйел адам екендігін білдіруде қолданылады: *waitress, lioness, actress, hostess*.

Lady сөзі сыпайыгершілікті көрсетеді, бірақ бұл сөз әйелдер туралы ресми, ғылыми және медициналық контексте қолданған жағдайда ғана қолданылады: *Lady - doctor, business lady, lady of quality, Lady Diana*.

Артикль (The Article)

Ағылшын тілінде екі артикль бар: белгісіз және белгілі артикль.

Белгісіз артикль **one** сан есімінен, белгілі артикль **that (anay)** сілтеу есімдігінен шыққан.

Артикль қолданылады:

- әрбір жалпы есім алдында.

Артикль қолданылмайды, егер зат есім алдында:

- сілтеу немесе тәуелдеу есімдіктері,
- тәуелдеу септігінде басқа зат есім,
- есептік сан есім,
- *no* болымсыздығы тұрса.

Мысалы: *This is my book. I have no book. It's teacher's book.*

Зат туралы бірінші рет айтқанда белгісіз артикль **a (an)** қолданылады. Осы затты екінші рет айтқанда белгілі артикль **the** қолданылады.

Белгісіз артикль.

Белгісіз артикль бір класқа жататын заттардың ішіндегі бірі деген мағынадағы зат есімнің алдында қолданылады.

Мысалы: *I bought a book yesterday.* (сондай заттардың бірін) *I have an apple.* (бір)

Егер де сөз дауыссыз дыбыстан басталса, онда сөздің алдында **a [ə]** артиклі қойылады.

Мысалы: *a table* үстел, *a book* кітап

Егер сөз дауысты дыбыстан басталса, онда сөздің алдына **an [ən]** артиклі қойылады.

Мысалы: *an apple* алма, *an old man* шал, қарт адам.

Белгісіз артикль тек жекеше түрдегі саналатын зат есімдердің алдында тұрады. Саналмайтын зат есімдер мен көпше түрдегі зат есімдердің алдында артикль қолданылмайды.

Белгісіз артикль қолданылмайды:

- а) саналмайтын және «дерексіз» зат есімдермен:

I like coffee and tea. Friendship is very important in our life.

б) көпше түрдегі зат есімдермен:

these are the nicest cars I have ever seen.

в) жалқы есімдермен:

I told Jane about that.

г) өзінен кейін есептік сан есім қолданылған зат есіммен:

I have read page eight of the magazine.

Белгісіз артикль <i>a</i> келесі құрылымдарда қолданылады:		
I have a ...	This is a ...	I am a ...
I see a ...	There is a ...	He is a ...

Белгілі артикль the

Белгілі артикль **the** бір класқа тән заттардың бірін немесе бірнешеуін бөліп көрсетеді.

The book I bought yesterday was interesting. – Кеше мен сатып алған кітап қызықты болды. (бұл айтушы бір кластан бөліп алған заттың белгілісі)

Белгілі артикль **the** саналатын да, саналмайтын да зат есімдермен, жекеше және көпше түрдегі зат есімдермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: *This is a book. The book is interesting.* (жекеше түрдегі саналатын зат есім)

This is meat. The meat is fresh. (саналмайтын зат есім)

These are books. The books are good. (көпше түр)

Егер сөз дауыссыз дыбыстан басталса, онда белгілі артикль **the [ðə]** болып айтылады.

Мысалы: *The table* [ðə teɪbl]

The book [ðə bu:k]

Егер сөз дауысты дыбыстан басталса, онда белгілі артикль **the [ði:]** болып айтылады.

Мысалы: *The apple* [ði: æpl], *the old man* [ði: ould mæn]

Белгілі артикль қолданылмайды:

а) қай зат туралы айтылғаны белгілі болса:

Open the door, please. I am going to the University.

б) жаратылысында жалғыз нәрсе немесе құбылыс туралы айтылса:

The moon is shining brightly.

в) егер зат есім алдында күшейтпелі шырайдағы сын есім тұрса:

This is the most interesting book.

г) *in the north, to the west, at the cinema, the same, in the country, the rest of the ...* сөз тіркестерінде.

Географиялық атаулар және артикль

Географиялық атаулармен әдетте артикль қолданылмайды. Артикль келесі жағдайларда қолданылады:

а) көл, өзен, мұхит, тау жотасы, арал топтары атауларымен белгілі артикль қолданылады: *the Pacific Ocean, the Black Sea, the Thames, the British Isles*.

б) белгілі артикль кейбір ел, облыс және қала атауларымен қолданылады: *the Ukraine, the Crimea, the Caucasus, the Netherlands, the Hague, the Riviera, the Congo, the West Indies*

в) жанұяның жинақтау атауымен: *The Petrovs* – Петровы.

Сын есім. (The Adjective)

Сын есім *қандай* деген сұраққа жауап береді.

Мысалы: *red* қызыл, *good* жақсы, *interesting* қызықты, Russian орысша.

Өзінің құрылысы бойынша сын есімдер жай (**big** үлкен, **small** кішкентай, **short** қысқа), туынды (**cultural** мәдениетті, **hopeless** үмітсіз, **doubtful** күдікті) және күрделі болады (**dark-blue** қара-көк, **red-** hot қыздырылған).

Ағылшын тілінде сын есімдер жақ түрінде, көпше түрінде, септеу түрінде өзгермейді.

Мысалы: *a young man* жас жігіт, *a young woman* жас әйел, *young people* жас адамдар, *with a young man* жас жігітпен.

Шырайлар (Degrees of Comparison)

Ағылшын тілінде сын есімдердің үш шырайы бар: жай шырай (The Positive Degree), салыстырмалы шырай (The Comparative Degree) және күшейтпелі шырай (The Superlative Degree).

Сын есімдер жай шырайда заттың сапасын ешбір сөзбен салыстырмай көрсетеді : *Long* –ұзын(жай шырай)

Longer –ұзындау (салыстырмалы шырай)

The longest- ең ұзын (күшейтпелі шырай)

Бір буыннан тұратын сын есімдер салыстырма шырайды сын есімнің жай шырай формасына **er** [ə], күшейтпелі шырайды **est** [ɪst] жалғау арқылы жасайды. Сын есімнің алдында күшейтпелі шырайда *the* деген артикль қолданылады.

Мысалы: *Cold-colder-the coldest*

Large-large-the largest

Hot-hotter-the hottest

Екі және көп буынды сын есімдердің салыстырмалы шырайы *more*, күшейтпелі шырайы *most* сөздері арқылы жасалады. Бұл сөздер (*more* және *most*) сын есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: *Active-more active-the most active*

Difficult-more difficult-the most difficult

Ағылшын тілінде кейбір сын есімнің шырайлары ережеге бағынбай жасалады.

Мысалы: good-better-the best

Жақсы-жақсырақ-ең жақсы

Bad-worse-the worst

Жаман-жаманырақ-ең жаман

Little-less-the least.

Аз-азырақ-ең аз

Many, much-more-the most

Көп-көбірек-ең көп

Far-farther, further-the farthest, the furthest

Алыс, қашығырақ, тым қашық, ең қашық

Салыстырмалы шырайда сын есімдерден кейін *than* деген шылау қолданылады.

Мысалы: Moscow is larger than Leningrad.

Мәскеу Ленинградтан үлкендеу.

Сөйлемде күшейтпелі шырайдағы сын есімдерден кейін зат есім демеулікпен жиі кездеседі.

Мысалы: The Volga is the longest river in Europe.

Волга Европадағы ең ұзын өзен.

Сан есім (The Numeral)

Сан есімдер есептік және реттік сан есімге бөлінеді: есептік сан есім қанша? (**how many?**) деген сұраққа жауап береді (**бір, екі, үш**), *реттік сан есім қай?* (**which?**) *қайсысы? нешінші?* деген сұраққа жауап береді (**the first бірінші, the second екінші, the third үшінші**).

Өзінің құрылысы бойынша сан есімдер жай (**one бір, two екі**) туынды (**sixteen он алты, fifty елу**) және құрама болып бөлінеді (**two hundred екі жүз, forty five қырық бес**).

Есептік сан есімдер (Cardinal Numerals)

1-12		13-19	20-90
1-one	13-thirteen		20-twenty
2-two	14-fourteen		21-twenty-one
3-three	15-fifteen		30-thirty
4-four	16-sixteen		40-forty
5-five	17-seventeen		50-fifty
6-six	18-eighteen		60-sixty
7-seven	19-nineteen		70-seventy
8-eight			80-eighty
9-nine			90-ninety

10-ten

11-eleven

12-twelve

Есептік сан есімде 20-дан 90-ға дейін *ty* деген жұрнақ қосылады.

21- twenty -one, 22- twenty - two деген есептік сан есімдер дефис арқылы жазылады.

100- a (one) hundred, 200 – two hundred.

Hundred, thousand, million деген сан есімдердің алдында белгісіз (a) артикль немесе one деген сан есім қойлады.

Реттік сан есім (Ordinal numerals)

Реттік сан есімде (1, 2, 3 қоспағанда) *th* жұрнағы қосылады.

Мысалы: 1 – 12

1st -the first - бірінші

2nd -the second - екінші

3rd -the third - үшінші

4th -the fourth - төртінші

5th -the fifth - бесінші

6th -the sixth - алтыншы

7th -the seventh - жетінші

8th -the eighth - сегізінші

9th -the ninth - тоғызыншы

10th -the tenth - оныншы

11th -the eleventh - он бірінші

12th -the twelfth - он екінші

20 – 90

20 - the	twentieth
21 - the	twenty-first
22 nd - the	twenty-second
30 th - the	thirtieth
40 th - the	fortieth
50 th - the	fiftieth
60 th - the	sixtieth
70 th - the	seventieth
80 th - the	eightieth
90 th - the	ninetieth

Ондықтырды білдіретін сан есімдерге *-th* жұрнағы қосылғанда ең соңғы әріп **-y** - **ie** әріптеріне өзгереді.

100th -the hundredth

101st-the hundred and first
200th- the two hundredth

Хронологиялық оқиға уақыты.

Ағылшын тілінде жылдар есептік сан есіммен көрсетіледі.

1900-nineteen hundred

1904- nineteen four

1945- nineteen forty-five

1961- nineteen sixty-one

Уақыттар ағылшын тілінде реттік сан есіммен көрсетіледі.

15th May, 1960-the fifteenth of May, nineteen sixty. May 15, 1960 May of fifteen, nineteen sixty.

Есімдік (The Pronoun)

Есімдік деп зат есімнің немесе сын есімнің орына қолданылатын сөз табын айтады.

Мысалы: Pushkin is the greatest Russian poet. He was born in 1799.

Пушкин ең ұлы орыс ақыны. Ол 1799 жылы туған.

(Пушкин деген зат есімнің орына, he деген есімдік қойылады).

The day was warm. Such days are rare in October.

Күн жылы болды. Қазан айында мұндай күндер сирек кездеседі.

(**warm** деген сын есімнің орына, **such** деген есімдік қойылады).

Есімдіктер зат есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: I see them every day.

Мен оларды күнде көремін.

Where is my fountain-pen?

Менің қаламым қайда?

Есімдіктер өз алдына қолданылады.

Мысалы: He is a doctor Ол дәрігер.

Helen saw him yesterday. Лена оны кеше көрді.

The pencil is mine Қарандаш менікі.

Көптеген есімдіктер кей жағдайларда зат есімнің алдында қолданылады, кейде есімдіктер өз алдына қолданылады.

Мысалы: Peter read all the stories in this book.

Петр бұл кітаптан барлық әңгімені оқып шықты

All were ready for the trip.

Барлығы жол сапарға дайын болды.

Есімдіктерді мағынасына қарай топтастыру және олардың қолданылуы.

Есімдіктер өз мағынасы бойынша келесі топтарға бөлінеді:

1) жіктеу есімдіктері, 2) тәуелдеу есімдіктері, 3) өздік есімдіктері, 4) сілтеу есімдіктері, 5) ортақ есімдіктері, 6) сұрау есімдіктері, 7) қатыстық есімдіктері, 8) белгісіз есімдіктері.

3. Жіктеу есімдіктері (Personal Pronouns)

Жақ	Атау септік	Объектік септік
Жекеше түрі		
1ж	I - мен	Me - мені, маған
2ж	You - сіз	You - сізге, сізді
3ж	He she it - ол	Him, her - оны, оған
Көпше түрі		
1ж	We - біз	Us - бізге, біздерді
2ж	You - сіздер	You - сіздерге, сіздерді
3ж	They - олар	Them - оларға, оларды

I деген есімдік әрқашан бас әріппен жазылады.

Мысалы: My brother and I took part in this work.

Менің ағам және мен бұл жұмысқа қатыстық.

He есімдігі еркек жынысын көрсетеді, **she** есімдігі әйел жынысын көрсетеді.

Мысалы: Peter is a doctor. He works at a hospital.

Петер – дәрігер. Ол ауруханада жұмыс істейді.

Where is Helen? She is at home.

Лена қайда? Ол үйде

It есімдігі жансыз затты көрсетеді.

Мысалы: The pencil is black. It is black

Қарандаш қара түсті. Ол қара.

The window is open. It is open.

Терезе ашық. Ол ашық.

It есімдігі жан-жануар туралы айтқанда қолданылады.

Мысалы: The cat is under the table. It is under the table.

Мысық үстелдің астында. Ол үстелдің астында.

They (олар) есімдігі жанды және жансыз зат есімдердің орнына қолданылады.

Мысалы: The children are in the corridor. They are in the corridor.

Балалар коридорда. Олар коридорда.

Жіктеу есімдіктері объектік септікте *кімге? кімді? неге? нені?* деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Мысалы: I saw him yesterday. Мен оны кеше көрдім.

He showed them his library. Ол кітапханасын оларға көрсетті.

Есімдіктер объектік септікте әртүрлі демеуліктермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: This letter is for you. Бұл хат сізге.

They told me about it. Олар маған бұл туралы айтты.

Тәуелдеу есімдіктері. Possessive pronouns.

Тәуелдеу есімдіктері *кімнің? кімдікі?* деген сұрақтарға жауап береді . Тәуелдеу есімдіктерінің екі тұлғасы бар: бірінші түрі зат есімнің алдында қолданылады, екіншісі өз алдына қолданылады.

Зат есімнің алдынан қолданылатын тәуелдеу есімдіктер.

Жақ	Жекеше түрі	Көпше түрі
1ж	my-менің	Our-біздің
2ж	Your -сіздің	Your -сіздердің
3ж	His-оның Her-оның Its-оның	Their-олардың

Тәуелдеу есімдіктері бұл тұлғада зат есімді анықтап,зат есім артикльсіз қолданылады.

Мысалы: His watch is on the table.Оның сағаты столдың үстінде.

Where is my new dictionary? Менің жаңа сөздігім қайда?

Зат есімдерсіз қолданылатын тәуелдеу есімдіктері.

Жақ	Жекеше түрі	Көпше түрі
1ж	mine-менікі	Ours-біздікі
2ж	yours-сіздікі	yours-сіздердікі
3ж	his-оныкі hers-оныкі its-оныкі	theirs-олардікі

Мысалы: This is not my pencil. Mine is blue.

Бұл менің қарандашым емес, менікі көк.

Өздік есімдіктер. Reflexive pronouns.

Өздік есімдіктер жекеше түрдегі есімдіктерге **-self** және көпше түрдегі есімдіктерге **-selves** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Жақ	Жекеше түрі	Көпше түрі
1ж	Myself- өзімді	Ourselves- өзімізді
2ж	Yourself- өзіңді	yourselves- өздеріңізді
3ж	himself- өзін herself- өзін itself- өзін	themselves-өздерін

Өздік есімдіктер ағылшын тілінде сөйлемде етістіктен кейін тұрады.
Мысалы: He defended himself bravely. Ол өзін батыл қорғады.

Reciprocal pronouns. Ортақ есімдіктер

Ортақ есімдіктерге **each, other, one, another** деген есімдіктері жатады.

Мысалы: They have known each other for two years.

Олар бір-бірін екі жыл біледі.

They looked at one another.

Олар бір-біріне қарады

Demonstrative pronouns. Сілтеу есімдіктер.

Сілтеу есімдіктерге **this (these) that (those)** және **it, such, same** деген есімдіктер жатады.

This (these), that (those).

Сілтеу есімдіктерге жекеше түрінде **this , that** есімдіктері жатады көпше түрінде - **these, those**. Егер заттар сөйлеушіге жақын жерде орналасса, онда **this, these** есімдіктері қолданылады және сөйлемде олар зат есімнің алдында тұрады. **That, those** есімдіктері заттар сөйлеушіден алыстау тұрса қолданылады.

Мысалы: This young man is my brother. Бұл жас жігіт менің ағам

Do you know that man? Ана бір адамды білесіз бе?

These cigarettes are very good. Бұл темекі өте жақсы.

I like those flowers. Маған ана гүлдер ұнайды.

It.

Сілтеу есімдігі **it** бұл деп аударылады.

Мысалы: What is this? It is a dictionary.

Бұл не? Бұл сөздік.
What are these? They are dictionaries.
Бұл нелер? Бұл сөздіктер.

Such, same.

Such есімдігі сөйлемде *осындай, мұндай, сондай* деген мағынада зат есім алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: These are such interesting books!
Бұл сондай қызықты кітаптар!

Same есімдігі *сол, ол, сонау, анау, ана бір, дәл сол* деп аударылады және сөйлемде **“same”** деген есімдігі алдында **“the”** белгілі артиклі қолданылады.

Мысалы: He read the same story twice.
Ол сол әңгімені екі рет оқыды

Interrogative pronouns. Сұрай есімдіктер.

Сұрай есімдіктерге **who (whom) whose, what, which** есімдіктері жатады. **Who** есімдігі *кім?* деп аударлады.

Мысалы: Who is standing there? Ана жерде тұрған кім?
Who knows her address? Кім оның адресін біледі?

Whom есімдігі *кімді* деп аударылады.

Мысалы: Who (whom) did you see there? Сіз онда кімді көрдіңіз?
Whom есімдігі сөйлемде әртүрлі демеуліктермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: From whom did you receive the letter?
Сіз хатты кімнен алдыңыз?

To whom есімдігі *кімге?* деп аударлады және **by whom?** *кіммен, кім* деп аударылады.

Мысалы: To whom did you give your dictionary?
Сіз кімге өз сөздігіңізді бердіңіз?
By whom is this letter signed?
Бұл хатқа кім қол қойды?

Whose.

Whose есімдігі *кімнің, кімдікі* деп аударылады. Ағылшын тілінде **whose** есімдігі сөйлемде зат есім анықтаушы болып артикльсіз қолданылады.

Мысалы: Whose dictionary did you take?
Сіз кімнің сөздігін алдыңыз?

Whose fountain-pen is this?
Бұл кімнің қаламы?

What.

Ағылшын тілінде **what** есімдігі *не, немене* деп аударлады.

Мысалы: What is lying on the table? Үстелдің үстінде не жатыр?

Ағылшын тілінде **what** есімдігі сөйлемде әртүрлі демеуліктермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: About what did you speak to him?

Сіз не туралы онымен сөйлестіңіз.

Кейде **what** есімдігі ағылшын тілінде *қандай?* және *кім?* деп аударлады.

Мысалы: What is the population of Odessa?

Одессада халықының саны қандай?

What is that man?

Ана адам кім?

Ағылшын тілінде **what** есімдігі *қандай?* деп аударлады және сөйлемде зат есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: What question did he ask?

Ол қандай сұрақ қойды?

Which.

Ағылшын тілінде **which** есімдігі *қай? қайсысы? кім? қандай? не?* деп аударылады.

Мысалы: Which story in this book is the most interesting?

Бұл кітапта қай әңгіме ең қызықты?

Which of you speaks German?

Сіздердің қайсыңыз немісше сөйлейсіз?

Which do you prefer - tea or coffee?

Сіз не ұнатасыз - шәй ме әлде кофе ме?

Relative pronouns. Қатыстық есімдіктер.

Ағылшын тілінде **who, whose, which** сұрау есімдіктері сөйлемде сұрақ үшін пайдаланылмай, сөйлемдерді байланыстыру үшін қолданылса, бұл есімдіктер қатыстық есімдіктер деп атайды.

Мысалы: Who has written this letter is unknown.

Бұл хатты кім жазғаны белгісіз.

I do not know which story is the most interesting in this book.

Бұл кітапта қай әңгіменің ең қызықты екенін мен білмеймін.

Who (whom).

Ағылшын тілінде адам туралы айтылғанда **who (whom)** *қай, қайсысы* есімдіктері қолданылады.

Мысалы: This is the man who wanted to speak to you.
Бұл сізбен сөйлескісі келген адам.

Which.

Ағылшын тілінде жансыз зат туралы немесе жануар туралы айтылғанда **which** есімдігі қолданылады.

Мысалы: He showed me the letter which he had received from his brother
Ағасынан алған хатты, ол маған көрсетті
He showed me the skin of the wolf which he had killed.
Ол маған өзі өлтірген қасқырдың терісін көрсетті.

Whose.

Ағылшын тілінде **whose** есімдігі жанды зат есімдерге қатысты қолданылады және сөйлемде зат есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: That is the girl whose brother came to see us the other day.
Мынау жуықта бізге келген қыздың ағасы.

That.

Ағылшын тілінде **that** есімдігі сөйлемде жанды және жансыз заттармен қолданылады және сөйлемде **that** есімдігінің орнына **whose, whom** есімдіктерін қолдануға болады.

Мысалы: Take the book that is lying on the table. (Which)
Үстелдің үстінде жатырған кітапты ал.

Whom, which есімдіктері сөйлемде демеуліктермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: He is the student to whom I gave my dictionary.
Ол мен сөздігімді берген студент.

Indefinite pronouns. Белгісіз есімдіктер.

Ағылшын тілінде белгісіз есімдіктерге **some, any, no, much, little, few, all, both, each, other, one** есімдіктері жатады.

Some, any.

Ағылшын тілінде **some** есімдігі болымды сөйлемдерде қолданылады, **any** есімдігі сұраулы және болымсыз сөйлемдерде қолданылады.

1. Сөйлемдерде **some, any** есімдіктері көпше түрдегі зат есімнің алдында тұрады және *ол бірнеше, ешқандай, қандай болмасын, қандай болсада*, деп аударылады.

Мысалы: He asked me some questions.

Ол маған бірнеше сұрақ қойды.
He did not make any mistakes in his dictation.
Ол диктанта ешқандай қате жіберген жоқ.

2. **Some, any** есімдіктері сөйлемде саналмайтын зат есімнің алдында қолданылады және олар *біразы, аздап, азғана, қанша болса да* деп аударылады.

Мысалы: Bring me some milk, please.
Маған аздап сүт алып келіңізші.
Is there any butter on the table?
Үстелдің үстінде май бар ма?

Some есімдігі кейбір деген мағынада көпше түрдегі зат есімнің алдында қолданылады.

Мысалы: Some trees remain green all the year round.
Кейбір ағаштар жыл бойы жасыл болады.

Some есімдігі сөйлемде сан есімнің алдында тұрады және *шамамен* деп аударлады.

Мысалы: There were some fifty people there.
Онда шамамен 50 адам болды.

Ағылшын тілінде **any** есімдігі жекеше түрдегі саналатын және саналмайтын зат есімнің алдында тұрады. **Any** *кез-келген* деп аударылады.

Мысалы: You may come here at any time.
Сенің осында кез-келген уақытта келуіңе болады.

Some және any есімдіктерінен туындаған есімдіктер.

Some, any есімдіктері **-one, -thing** және **-body** сөздерімен байланысып белгісіз есімдіктерді құрайды: **someone, somebody** *біреу әлдекім*, **anybody, anyone** *кім де болса*, **something** *бірдеме, бір нәрсе*, **anything** *не де болса*.

1. **some, any** есімдіктері сияқты **someone, somebody** және **something** есімдіктері болымды сөйлемдерде қолданылады, **anyone, anybody** және **anything** есімдіктері сұраулы және болымсыз сөйлемдерде қолданылады.

Мысалы: Give me something to read.
Маған бірдеме оқуға берші.
Did you see anybody (anyone) there?
Сіз ол жерден біреуді көрдіңіз бе?

2. **Any** есімдігі сияқты **anyone, anybody, anything** есімдіктері сөйлемдерде *әркім, әр нәрсе* деген мағынада болымды, болымсыз және сұраулы сөйлемдерде қолданылады.

Мысалы: *Anyone can do that.*

Мұны әркім істей алады.

You may play anything you like.

Сізге өзіңіз қалаған нәрсені ойнауыңызға болады.

No.

No есімдігі сөйлемде жекеше және көпше түрдегі зат есімнің алдында тұрады. **No** есімдігі *not ... а* және **not ... any** сияқты аударылады.

Мысалы: *I have no ticket. (I haven't a ticket)*

Менде билет жоқ.

I found no mistakes in your dictation.

(I did not find any mistakes in your dictation)

Мен сіздің диктантаңыздан ешқандай қате таба алмадым.

Ағылшын тілінде **not** жекеше түрдегі саналатын зат есімнің алдында қолданылады. **Not any** көпше түрдегі саналатын зат есімнің және саналмайтын зат есімнің алдында қолданылады.

No есімдігінен туындаған есімдіктер.

No есімдікті **body, one** және **thing** сөздерімен байланысып болымсыз есімдіктерді құрайды. **Nobody, no one** (*ешкім*) **nothing** (*ешбір зат, ештеңе*).

Мысалы: *We saw nobody there. We didn't see anybody there.*

Біз сонда ешкімді көрген жоқпыз.

Many, much.

Many мен **much** есімдіктері *көп* деген мағынада қолданылады. **Many** есімдігі ағылшын тілінде саналатын зат есімнің алдында тұрады, **much** есімдігі саналмайтын зат есімдердің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: *Has he many friends in Moscow?*

Оның Мәскеуде көп досы бар ма?

Do you spend much time on your homework?

Сіз үй тапсырмаңызға көп уақытыңызды жібересіз бе?

Ағылшын тілінде **much, many** есімдіктері негізінен сұраулы және болымсыз сөйлемдерде пайдаланылады. Егер есімдіктер алдында *very, too, so, as, how* сөздері тұрған жағдайда **much, many** есімдіктері болымды сөйлемдерде қолданылады.

Мысалы: He has very many friends in Moscow.

Оның Мәскеуде өте көп достары бар.

Few, little.

Ағылшын тілінде **few, little** есімдіктері *аз* деп аударылады.

Few есімдігі саналатын зат есімдермен қолданылады. **Little** есімдігі саналмайтын зат есімдермен қолданылады.

Егер есімдіктер алдында **very, too, so, as, how** сөздері тұрса **few, little** есімдіктері болымды сөйлемдерде қолданылады.

Мысалы: There were very few people there.

Онда өте аз адам болды.

I have so little time.

Менің уақытым сондай аз.

Few және **little** есімдіктерімен “a” артиклін қолдануға болады:

a few, a little *аздап, бірнеше*

Мысалы: Please give me a little water.

Маған аздап су беріңізші.

All.

Ағылшын тілінде **all** есімдігі *бүкіл, жалпы, барлық, бәрі* деген мағынада көпше түрдегі саналатын зат есімдермен қолданылады.

All есімдігі *бәрі, барлығы, бар, бүкіл* деп аударылады және саналмайтын зат есімдермен қолданылады.

Мысалы: He spends all his free time in the reading-room.

Ол бүкіл бос уақытын оқу залында өткізеді.

Both.

Ағылшын тілінде **both** есімдігі *екеу, екі* деп аударылады. Зат есімдер сөйлемде **the** артиклімен және артикльсіз қолданылады. **The** артиклі сөйлемде “**both**” есімдігінен кейін тұрады.

Мысалы: Both (the) brothers live in Moscow.

Екі ағайын Мәскеуде тұрады.

Both my daughters are married.

Менің екі қызым тұрмыста.

Each and every.

Ағылшын тілінде **each** есімдігі *әрбір, әркім, әрқайсысы* деп аударылады. “**Each**” есімдігі жекеше түрдегі саналатын зат есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Each student in our group has an English-Russian dictionary.

Біздің топтың әрбір студентінде ағылшын-орыс сөздігі бар.

Ағылшын тілінде **every** есімдігі *әрбір, әркім* деп аударлады. “**Every**” сөйлемде жекеше түрдегі саналатын зат есімдердің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: I see him every day.

Мен оны күнде көремін.

“**Every**” есімдігінен туындаған есімдіктер.

Every есімдігі **body, thing, one** сөздерімен тіркесіп **everybody, everything, everyone** есімдіктері құрылады. **Everybody, everyone** *әрбір, әрқайсысы, әркім, бүкіл, бәрі* деп аударлады. **everything** *бәрі, барлығы, бүкіл* деп аударлады.

Мысалы: Everybody (everyone) is here.

Бәрі де осында.

Everything is ready.

Барлығы дайын.

Other.

Ағылшын тілінде “**other**” есімдігі *басқа, басқалар* деп аударылады. Сөйлемде “**other**” есімдігі жекеше және көпше түріндегі зат есімнің алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Where are the other books that I gave you?

Мен сізге берген басқа кітаптар қайда?

One.

Сөйлемде “**one**” есімдігі бастауыштың қызметін атқарады.

Мысалы: One should be careful when crossing the street.

Көшеден өткенде сақ болу керек.

Сөйлемде “**one**” есімдігі жиі **must should, ought, can, may** етістіктерімен қолданылады.

Мысалы: One must observe... Сақтау керек...

One can find... Табуға болады...

Active voice. Негізгі етіс.

The verb. Етістік.

Етістік іс-әрекетті, жай күйді көрсететін сөз табы.

Мысалы: My brother works at a factory.

Менің ағам фабрикада жұмыс істейді.

He slept for six hours.

Ол 6 сағат ұйықтады.

Етістіктің негізгі формалары.

Ағылшын тілінде етістіктің үш негізгі нысаны бар: бірінші етістіктің алғашқы өзгермеген нысаны (The Infinitive), екінші нысан өткен шақ формасы (Past Indefinite), үшінші нысан өткен шақ есімшесі (Past Participle)

Дұрыс етістіктер және бұрыс етістіктер.

Ағылшын тілінде етістіктер екі топқа бөлінеді: дұрыс етістіктер және бұрыс етістіктер.

Дұрыс етістіктердің Past Indefinite және Past Participle формалары - ed жалғауы арқылы жасалады.

Infinitive

To open

To work

Past Indefinite

Opened

Worked

Past Participle

Opened

Worked

Бұрыс етістіктердің Past Indefinite және Past Participle формалары ерекше жолмен жасалады және олар бұрыс етістіктер кестесінде беріледі.

Infinitive

To go

To write

Past Indefinite

Went

Wrote

Past Participle

Gone

Written

“To be” етістігінің Present, Past және Future Indefinite шақтарында жіктелуі.

“To be” етістігі *бар, болу* деген мағынада бастауыш пен баяндауышты жалғастырушы етістік ретінде қолданылады. “To be” етістігінің осы шақта 3 формасы (жекше түрдің 1 жағында - **am**, 3 жағында - **is**, көпше түрде - **are**), өткен шақта 2 формасы (жекеше түрде - **was**, көпше түрде - **were**) келер шақта 2 формасы (1 жақта - **shall be**, 2 және 3 жақтарда - **will be**) бар.

“To be” етістігінің Present Indefinite шағында жіктелуі.

Болымды нысаны	Сұраулы нысаны	Болымсыз нысаны
Жекеше түр		
I am [æm] You are [ɑ:] He She is [iz] It	Am I? Are you? he? Is she? it?	I am not You are not He She is not It
Көпше түр		
We You are [ɑ:] They	we? Are you? they?	We You are not They

Қысқартылған формалары: I'm, you're, he's, she's, it's, aren't, isn't.

“To be” етістігінің Past Indefinite шағында жіктелуі.

Болымды нысаны	Сұраулы нысаны	Болымсыз нысаны
Жекеше түр		
I was [wɒz, wəz] You were [wə:, wə] He She was [wɒz, wəz] It	Was I? Were you? he? Was she? it?	I was not You were not He She was not It
Көпше түр		
We You were [wə:, wə] They	we? Were you? they?	We You were not They

Қысқартылған формалары: wasn't [wɒznt], weren't [wə:nt]

“To be” етістігінің Future Indefinite шағында жіктелуі.

Болымды нысаны	Сұраулы нысаны	Болымсыз нысаны
Жекеше түр		
I shall be [ʃəl bi] You will be [wil bi] He She will be [wil bi] It	Shall I be? Will you be? he be? Will she be? it be?	I shall not be You will not be He She will not be It
Көпше түр		

We shall be [ʃəl bi]	Shall we be?	We shall not be
You will be [wɪl bi]	Will you be?	You will not be
They will be [wɪl bi]	Will they be?	They will not be

Қысқартылған формалары: I'll [aɪl], you'll [ju:l], he'll [hi:l], she'll [ʃi:l], it'll [ɪtl], we'll [wi:l], they'll [ðeɪl], shan't [ʃɑ:nt], won't [wəʊnt].

Construction There is / there are

There is / there are құрылымы

There is / there are құрылымы белгілі бір жерде бір заттың бар немесе жоқ екенін көрсету үшін қолданылады:

There is a book on the table. Үстелде кітап жатыр.

There are pens on the desk. Партада қаламдар бар

There is / there are құрылымынан кейін саналатын зат есімдер жекеше түрде белгісіз артикльмен, көпше түрде артикльсіз қолданылады:

There is a table in the room. Бөлмеде үстел бар.

There are chairs in the room. Бөлмеде орындықтар бар.

Болымсыз сөйлемді жасау үшін **not** болымсыздығы **to be** етістігінен кейін қолданылады:

There is not a book on the desk. Үстелдің үстінде кітаптар жоқ.

There are not pens on the table. Үстелдің үстінде қаламдар жоқ.

Сұраулы сөйлемдерде **to be** етістігі **there** алдына қойылады:

Is there a child in the room? Бөлмеде сәби бар ма?

Are there children in the room? Бөлмеде балалар бар ма?

Қысқа болымды жауап **yes** сөзінен және **there is** немесе **there are** құрылымынан тұрады:

Is there a child in the room? – Бөлмеде сәби бар ма? - Бар.

Yes, there is.

Are there children in the room? – Бөлмеде балалар бар ма? – Бар.

Yes, there are.

Қысқа болымсыз жауап **no** сөзінен, **there is** немесе **there are** құрылымынан және **not** болымсыздығынан тұрады:

Is there a pen on the desk? – Партаның үстінде қалам бар ма? –

No, there is not. Жоқ.

Are there books on the table? – Үстелдің үстінде кітаптар бар ма?

—

No, there are not. Жоқ.

Өткен шақта бастауыш жекеше түрде тұрса **there was**, көпше түрде тұрса **there were** қолданылады.

There was a pen here, Бұл жерде қалам жатты, бірақ
but I don't see it. мен оны көрмей тұрмын.

There were books here. Бұл жерде кітаптар жатты.

Have you got them? Сен оларды алдың ба?

There is (there are) құрылымының келер шағы will көмекші етістігі арқылы жасалады.

There will be a new school
here next year.

Бұл жерде келесі жылы жаңа
мектеп болады.

Finite forms of the verb **Indefinite Tenses. Indefinite тобы.**

Бұл топқа: Present Indefinite tense (Жай осы шақ), Past Indefinite tense (жай өткен шақ), Future Indefinite tense (жай келер шақ) жатады.

Жай шақтардың жасалуы.

Болымды түрі.

1. Present Indefinite

Жай (ауыспалы) осы шақ жекеше түрдің 3-ші жағынан басқа жақтарда етістіктің бастапқы формасымен (to бөлшегінсіз) сәйкес келеді, ал жекеше түрдің 3-ші жағында –s жалғауы жалғанады.

Мысалы: to write-I write, he (she, it) writes, we write, you write, they write.

Егер етістіктер –**ss**, –**ch**, –**sh**, –**x** әріптеріне аяқталса үшінші жақта жекеше түрде –**es** жалғауы жалғанады, және ол [**iz**] деп оқылады.

Мысалы: I pass - he passes, I dress - he dresses, I wash - she washes.

Етістіктер “y” әрпіне аяқталса, үшінші жақта жекеше түрінде “y” әрпі “i” әрпіне өзгереді және –es жалғанады.

Мысалы: I study - he studies. I copy - she copies.

2. Past Indefinite

Жай өткен шақты дұрыс етістіктер барлық жақта етістіктің бастапқы формасына –**ed** жалғау арқылы жасайды. Ал бұрыс етістіктер әртүрлі жолмен жасайды (бұрыс етістіктер кестесі).

Мысалы: To work-I worked

To write-I wrote

3. Future Indefinite

Жай келер шақ көмекші етістіктер **shall** (I жақ жекеше және көпше түрде) немесе **will** (2,3 жақтарда) және етістіктің алғашқы нысаны (Infinitive) (to бөлшегінсіз) арқылы құрылады.

Мысалы: I shall write. We shall write

She (he) will write. They (you) will write.

Сұраулы түрі.

1. Жай осы шақ сұраулы түрі **do** көмекші етістігі арқылы құрылады (**do** етістігі барлық жақтарда қолданылады, бірақ үшінші жақ жекеше түрінде **does** көмекші етістігі қолданылады) және көмекші етістік **do, does** сұраулы сөйлемде бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Do I write? Does he write? Do we write?

2. Жай өткен шақ сұраулы түрі **did** көмекші етістігі арқылы құралады және **did** көмекші етістігі сұраулы сөйлемде бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Did I work? Did he work? Did they work?

3. Жай келер шақтың сұраулы түрі **shall, will** көмекші етістіктерін бастауыштың алдына қою арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: Shall I write? Will he work? Shall we write?

Болымсыз түрі.

1. Жай осы шақтың болымсыз түрі **do, does** көмекші етістіктері және **not** болымсыз бөлшегі арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I do not write. He does not write.

We do not write.

2. Жай өткен шақтың болымсыз түрі **to do** көмекші етістігінің өткен шақтағы формасы (**did**) және **not** болымсыз бөлшегі арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I did not write. He did not write.

We did not write

3. Жай келер шақтың болымсыз түрі **not** арқылы құралады және ол **shall, will** көмекші етістіктерінен кейін тұрады.

Мысалы: I shall not write. He will not write.

We shall not write.

Present Indefinite	Past Indefinite	Future Indefinite
I write letter to my father every week. Мен әкеме апта сайын хат жазамын.	I wrote a letter to my father yesterday Мен кеше әкеме хат жаздым.	I shall write a letter to my father tomorrow. Мен ертең әкеме хат жазамын.

Continuous Tenses.

Созылмалы шақтар тобы.

Бұл топ : Present Continuous Tense (созылмалы осы шақ) Past Continuous Tense (созылмалы өткен шақ), Future Continuous Tense (созылмалы келер шақ) тұрады.

Созылмалы шақтардың жасалуы.

Болымды түрі.

1. Созылмалы осы шақ осы шақтағы **to be** көмекші етістігі – **am, is, are** және негізгі етістікке – **ing** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I am writing. He, she, it-is writing.

They, you, we-are writing.

2. Созылмалы өткен шақ өткен шақтағы **to be** көмекші етістігі – **was, were** және негізгі етістікке – **ing** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I was writing. She, he, was writing

They, you, we were writing.

3. Созылмалы келер шақ келер шақтағы **to be** көмекші етістігі **shall be, will be** және негізгі етістікке – **ing** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I shall be writing. He, she, will be writing.

We shall be writing. They, you, will be writing.

Сұраулы түрі.

Сұраулы түрінде көмекші етістіктер **am (is, are) was (were) shall (will)** сөйлемде бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Present Continuous Tense: Am I writing?

Past Continuous Tense: Was I writing?

Future Continuous Tense: Shall I be writing?

Болымсыз түрі.

Болымсыз түрінде көмекші етістіктерден кейін **not** болымсыз бөлшегі қойылады.

Мысалы: Present Continuous Tense: I am not writing?

Past Continuous Tense: I was not writing?

Future Continuous Tense: I shall not be writing?

Present Continuous	Past Continuous	Future Continuous
I am reading a newspaper	I was reading a newspaper when he came	I shall be reading a newspaper when he comes.
Мен газет оқып отырмын	Ол келгенде мен газет оқып отырдым	Ол келгенде мен газет оқып отырамын

Perfect Tenses.
Аяқталған шақтар тобы.

Бұл топ: Present Perfect Tense (аяқталған осы шақ) Past Perfect Tense (аяқталған өткен шақ), Future Perfect Tense (аяқталған келер шақ) тұрады.

Аяқталған шақтардың құрылуы.
Болымды түрі.

1. Аяқталған осы шақ осы шақтағы **to have** көмекші етістігі (**have, has**) және негізгі етістіктің өткен шақтағы есімше формасы арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I have written. She (he, it) has written.
We (you, they) have written.

2. Аяқталған өткен шақ өткен шақтағы **to have** көмекші етістігі **had** және негізгі етістіктің өткен шақтағы есімше формасы арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I had written. He (she, it) had written.
We (they, you) had written.

3. Аяқталған келер шақ келер шақтағы **to have** етістігі –**shall have, will have** және негізгі етістіктің өткен шақтағы есімше формасы арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I (we) shall have written. He (she, it) will have written.
They (you) will have written.

Сұраулы түрі.

Сұраулы түрінде көмекші етістіктер бастауыштың алдында тұрады.
Мысалы: Present Perfect Tense: Have I written?

Past Perfect Tense: Had I written?

Future Perfect Tense: Shall I have written?

Болымсыз түрі.

Болымсыз түрінде not болымсыз бөлшегі сөйлемде көмекші етістіктерден кейін қойылады.

Мысалы: Present Perfect Tense: I have not written?

Past Perfect Tense: He had not written?

Future Perfect Tense: I shall not have written?

Present Perfect	Past Perfect	Future Perfect
I have written the letter, you may post it.	I had written the letter by five o'clock.	I shall have written the letter by five o'clock.
Мен хат жазып болдым, жеберуіңізге болады.	Мен хатты сағат беске таман жазып болдым.	Мен хатты сағат беске таман жазып боламын.

Perfect Continuous Tenses.

Аяқталған созылмалы шақтар тобы.

Бұл топ: Present Perfect Continuous Tense (Аяқталған созылмалы осы шақ) Past Perfect Continuous Tense (Аяқталған созылмалы өткен шақ), Future Perfect Continuous Tense (Аяқталған созылмалы келер шақ) тардан тұрады.

Болымды түрі.

1. Present Perfect Continuous Tense Аяқталған созылмалы осы шақ

Аяқталған созылмалы осы шақ аяқталған осы шақтағы (Present Perfect) **to be** көмекші етістігі (**have been, has been**) және негізгі етістікке -**ing** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I have been writing. He (he, it) has been writing.

They (we, you) have been writing.

2. Past Perfect Continuous Tense Аяқталған созылмалы өткен шақ

Аяқталған созылмалы өткен шақ аяқталған өткен шақтағы (Past Perfect) **to be** етістігі (**had been**) және негізгі етістікке -ing жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I had been writing. He, she, it had been writing.

They, you, we, had been writing.

3. Future Perfect Continuous Tense Аяқталған созылмалы келер шақ

Аяқталған нақ келер шақ аяқталған келер шақтағы (Future Perfect) **to be** етістігі (**will have been, shall have been**) және негізгі етістікке **-ing** жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: I shall have been writing. He (she, it) will have been writing.
They (you) will have been writing.
We shall have been writing.

Сұраулы түрі.

Сұраулы түрінде бірінші көмекші етістіктер бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: **Present Perfect Continuous:** Have I been working?
Has he been working?
Past Perfect Continuous Tense: Had we been working?
Future Perfect Continuous Tense: Shall I have been working?
Will he have been working?

Болымсыз түрі

Болымсыз түрі not болымсыз бөлшегі арқылы құрылады және not сөйлемде бірінші көмекші етістіктен кейін тұрады.

Мысалы: **Present Perfect Continuous:** I have not been working?
He has not been working?
Past Perfect Continuous Tense: I had not been working?
Future Perfect Continuous Tense: I shall not have been working?
He will not have been working?

Present Perfect Continuous	Past Perfect Continuous	Future Perfect Continuous
I have been working for two hours	I had been working for two hours, when they came back.	I shall have been working for two hours, when they come back.
Мен екі сағат бойы жұмыс істеп отырмын.	Олар қайтып келгенде мен екі сағат бойы жұмыс істеп отырдым.	Олар қайтып келгенде мен екі сағат бойы жұмыс істеп отырамын.

The Passive Voice. Ырықсыз етіс.
Ырықсыз етіс шақтары.
Ырықсыз етістің құрылуы.

Ырықсыз етістің шақтары үш топқа бөлінеді:

1. Indefinite Tense. (Жай шақ)

Бұл топ Present Indefinite Tense, Past Indefinite Tense, Future Indefinite Tense тұрады. Олар көмекші етістіктер: **am (is, are) was (were) shall (will) be** және негізгі етістіктің үшінші формасы (Past Participle) арқылы құрылады.

Present Indefinite	Past Indefinite	Future Indefinite
I am invited	I was invited	I shall be invited
He (she) is invited	He (she) was invited	He (she) will be invited
We are invited	We were invited	We shall be invited
You are invited	You were invited	You will be invited
They are invited	They were invited	They will be invited

2. Continuous Tense (созылмалы шақ)

Бұл топ Present Continuous Tense, Past Continuous Tense тұрады. (Ырықсыз етісте Future Continuous Tense шағы жоқ.) Present және Past Continuous Tense көмекші етістіктер **am (is, are) being, was (were) being** және негізгі етістіктің үшінші формасы (Past Participle) арқылы құрылады.

Present Continuous Tense	Past Continuous Tense
I am being invited	I was being invited
He (she) is being invited	He (she) was being invited
We are being invited	We were being invited
You are being invited	You were being invited
They are being invited	They were being invited

3. Perfect Tense (аяқталған шақ)

Бұл топ Present Perfect Tense, Past Perfect Tense және Future Perfect Tense тұрады. Олар көмекші етістіктер **have (has) been, had been, shall (will) have been** және негізгі етістіктің үшінші формасы (Past Participle) арқылы құрылады.

Present Perfect Tense	Past Perfect Tense	Future Perfect Tense
I have been invited	I had been invited	I shall have been invited
He (she) has been invited	He (she) had been invited	He (she) will have been invited
We have been invited	We had been invited	We shall have been

You have been invited	You had been invited	invited
They have been invited	They had been invited	You will have been invited
		They will have been invited

1. Сұраулы түрінде көмекші етістіктер бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Мысалы: Present Indefinite: Am I invited?
Past Indefinite: Was I invited?
Future Indefinite: Shall I be invited?
Present Continuous: Am I being invited?
Past Continuous: Was I being invited?
Present Perfect: Have I been invited?
Past Perfect: Had I been invited?
Future Perfect: Shall I have been invited?

3. Болымсыз түрінде not болымсыз бөлшегі бірінші көмекші етістіктен кейін тұрады.

Мысалы: Present Indefinite: I am not invited.
Past Indefinite: I was not invited?
Future Indefinite: I shall not be invited.
Present Continuous: I am not being invited.
Past Continuous: I was not being invited.
Present Perfect: I have not been invited.
Past Perfect: I had not been invited.
Future Perfect: I shall not have been invited.

Modal verbs. Модальдық етістіктер.

Етістіктер **can (could) may (might) must, ought, need** модальдық етістіктер тобына жатады. Сөйлемде модальдық етістіктер тәуелсіз қолданылмайды. Олар істің істелуіндегі мүмкіндікті, істей алушылықты, ықтималдықты және қажеттілікті көрсетеді.

Can (could).

Can етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып мүмкіндікті және істей алушылықты көрсетеді және қолдан келу, істей алу деп аударылады. Ағылшын тілінде **“can”** етістігі осы және өткен шақтарда қолданылады.

Мысалы: I can do it now.

Мен мұны істей аламын.

I can speak English.

Мен ағылшынша сөйлей білемін.

“Could” етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып, істің өткен шақта істелу мүмкіндігін көрсетеді. Ағылшын тілінде **“could”** деген етістік сөйлемде өткен шақты көрсетеді және істей алды, білді деп аударылады.

Мысалы: He could swim very well when he was young.

Жас кезінде ол жақсы жүзе алды.

May (might).

May етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып рұқсат алуды көрсетеді.

Мысалы: May I come in? Кіруге бола ма?

Might.

Ағылшын тілінде **“might”** етістігі “мүмкін” деп аударлады және шартты сөйлемнің екінші және үшінші түрлерінде басыңқы сөйлемде қолданылады.

Мысалы: If he were here, he might help.

Егер де ол осында болғанда, ол сізге көмектесе алар еді.

Must.

“Must” етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып істің істелу қажеттілігін, сонымен қатар бұйрық және ақыл беруді көрсеткенде қолданылады. **“Must”** осы және келер шақтарда қолданылады.

Мысалы: I must do it now.

Мен қазір істеуім керек.

You must consult a doctor.

Сізге дәрігерден кеңес алу қажет.

Ought.

“Ought” етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып кеңес және моральдық міндетті көрсетеді, осы және келер шақта қолданылады.

Мысалы: He ought to help his friend.

Ол өзінің досына көмектесуі қажет.

“Ought” етістігі Perfect Infinitive формасымен байланысып кінәлауды көрсетеді және өткен шақта тұрады.

Мысалы: You ought to have done it yesterday.

Сіз бұны кеше істеуіңіз керек еді.

Need.

“Need” етістігі етістіктің негізгі формасымен (Infinitive) байланысып істі істеу қажеттілігін көрсетеді. **“Need”** етістігі сұраулы

және болымсыз сөйлемдерде тек Present Indefinite формасында қолданылады.

Мысалы: Need he come here?

Оның мұнда келуі қажет пе?

“Need” етістігі негізгі етістікті ретінде де қолданылады, және “need” етістігі осы, өткен, келер шақта пайдаланылады.

Мысалы: You need a long rest.

Сізге ұзақ демалыс керек.

NON-FINITE FORMS OF THE VERBS

The Infinitive.

Ағылшын тілінде инфинитив жақты, шақты, райды көрсетпей істің іске асуын тек қана атайтын етістіктің жіктелмеген формасы. Инфинитив не *істеу?* не *жасау?* деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Мысалы: to read – оқу

Инфинитив “to” бөлшегімен және “to” бөлшегінсіз.

“To” бөлшегінің жеке мәні болмайды және екпін қабылдамайды.

Мысалы: **To buy** – *сатып алу*, **to sell** – *сату*.

Инфинитив “to” бөлшегінсіз қолданылады:

1. Модальдық етістіктен кейін:

Мысалы: He can speak German.

Ол немісше сөйлей біледі.

2. **to make** *мәжбүр ету* және **to let** *рұқсат ету* етістіктерінен кейін:

Мысалы: I made him read this story.

Мен оны бұл әңгімені оқуға мәжбүр еттім.

She let her son go there.

Ол баласына онда баруға рұқсат етті.

3. Объектік септеу инфинитивпен құрылымында **to see, to hear, to watch** етістіктерінен кейін:

Мысалы: We saw him cross the street.

Оның көшеден өтіп шыққанын біз көрдік.

I heard him sing.

Мен оның өлең айтқанын естідім.

4. Егерде сөйлемде екі инфинитив болса және олар “**and**” немесе “**or**” шылауымен байланысса, екінші инфинитив “to” бөлшегінсіз қолданылады.

Мысалы: He promised to telephone or wire.

Ол телефон соғуға немесе телеграмма беруге уәде берді.

Инфинитив нысандары.

Өзінен кейін тура толықтауыш қабылдайтын инфинитивтің негізгі етісте төрт формасы, ырықсыз етісте екі формасы бар. Өзінен кейін тура

толықтауышты қабылдайтын инфинитивтің негізгі етісте тек екі формасы бар.

	Өздік етіс	Ырықсыз етіс
Indefinite жай	To ask	To be asked
Continuous созылмалы	To be asking	_____
Perfect аяқталған	To have asked	To have been asked
Perfect Continuous Аяқталған созылмалы	To have been asking	_____

Ағылшын тілінде ең көп қолданылатын формалары - Indefinite Infinitive Active және Passive. Қалған инфинитив нысандары өте сирек қолданылады. Олардың ішінде басқаларына қарағанда жиірек қолданылатыны Perfect Infinitive.

Инфинитив формаларының құрылуы және қолданылуы.

Indefinite Infinitive Active (to ask) көмекші етістіксіз құрылған формасы. Indefinite Infinitive Passive (To be asked) “**to be**” көмекші етістігі және негізгі етістіктің Past Participle нысаны арқылы құрылған формасы. Indefinite Infinitive (Active, Passive) келесі қызметтерді атқарады:

1. Бастауыш функциясында:

Мысалы: To bath in the Black Sea is very pleasant.

Қара теңізде шомылу өте жанға жайлы.

2. Атаулы күрделі баяндауыш құрамында.

Бұл функцияда негізгі етістік “**to be**” жалғаушы-етістікпен қолданылады. Мысалы: The duties of a postman are to deliver letters and newspapers.

Почтальонның міндеті газеттер мен хаттарды апарып беру.

3. Етістікті күрделі баяндауыштың құрамында:

1) Модальдық етістікпен байланысып.

Мысалы: She must get up early.

Оның ерте тұруы керек.

2) Сын есім және жалғаушы етістікпен байланысып:

Мысалы: He is ready to help you.

Ол сізге көмектесуге дайын.

4. Тура толықтауыш функциясында:

Мысалы: He began to learn English last year.

Ол ағылшын тілін үйренуді өткен жылы бастады.

5. Анықтауыш функциясында:

Мысалы: We have intention to go there.

Біздің онда баруға ниетіміз бар.

6. Пысықтауыш функциясында:

Бұл функцияда инфинитив көрсетеді:

1. Мақсат. Сөйлемде инфинитив алдында **so as** немесе **in order** жалғаулықтары тұруы мүмкін:

Мысалы: We stopped there so as to rest a little.

Біз онда сәл демалуға тоқтадық.

2. Нәтиже (**too, enough**)

Мысалы: It is too cold to bathe today.

Шомылуға бүгін өте салқын.

Объектік септік инфинитивпен құрылымы. (The Objective Infinitive construction) Complex object – күрделі толықтауыш.

«Объектік септік инфинитивпен» немесе «күрделі толықтауыш» құрылымы ағылшын тілінде кейбір етістіктерден кейін бағыныңқылы сөйлемдердің орнына қолданылады. Ол объектік септіктегі есімдіктің немесе жалпы септіктегі зат есімнің инфинитивпен байланысы арқылы беріледі.

Күрделі толықтауыш негізгі етісте келесі етістіктерден кейін қолданылады:

1. **to want, to wish, to desire** т.б. есімдіктері және **I should like** құрылымы

Мысалы: He wants me to help him.

Ол менің көмектескенімді қалайды.

2. **To see, to hear, to feel, to observe, to notice** және т.б. сезім және қабылдау етістіктері. Инфинитив **«to»** бөлшегінсіз қолданылады.

Мысалы: We did not see the teacher enter the room.

Біз оқытушының бөлмеге кіргенін көрген жоқпыз.

3. **to order, to allow, to let, to cause, to force, to make** (*мәжбүр ету*) және т.б. бұйрықты, рұқсатты және өтінішті білдіретін етістіктер. **To make** (*мәжбүр ету*) және **to let** (*рұқсат ету*) етістіктерінен кейін инфинитив **«to»** бөлшегінсіз қолданылады.

Мысалы: The teacher made him rewrite the exercise.

Мұғалім оны жаттығуды қайта жазуға мәжбүр етті.

4. **To expect – күту, to believe to suppose, to know, to find, to consider** санау және т.б. етістіктері.

Мысалы: We knew him to be right. Біз оның дұрыс екенін білдік.

We believe him to finish this work tomorrow. Ол мына жұмысты ертең бітіреді деп біз сенеміз.

The Subjective Infinitive construction. (Complex subject).

«Атау септігі инфинитивпен» немесе «күрделі бастауыш» құрылымы жалпы септіктегі зат есім немесе атау септігіндегі есімдік және инфинитив арқылы беріледі.

Complex subject қолданылады:

1) **To see, to hear ..., to order, to cause, to allow ..., to expect, to know, to suppose ... , to say, to report, to announce** хабарлау және басқа етістіктер ырықсыз етісте баяндауыш ретінде тұрса:

Мысалы: They were seen to go home together.

Олардың бірге үйге бара жатырғанын көрді.

He was said to be writing a new play.

Оның жаңа пьеса жазып жатырғанын айтты.

2) **To seem, to appear, to prove, to happen, to chance** етістіктері негізгі етісте баяндауыш ретінде қолданылса:

Мысалы: The doctor happened to be at home.

3) Келесі күрделі атаулы баяндауыштар болса:

likely
IS liable мүмкін
apt

Is unlikely мүмкін емес

sure күмәнсіз, әрине
IS certain міндетті түрде
bound мүмкін

Мысалы: They are likely to return on Sunday.

Олар жексенбі күні келуі мүмкін.

The Gerund. Герундий.

Герундий етістік пен зат есімнің ерекшеліктерін байланыстыратын етістіктің жіктелмеген формасы. Герундий кез-келген ағылшын етістігінің инфинитив формасына – ing жалғауын жалғау арқылы жасалады.

Мысалы: increasing-көбею, obtaining-ұлғаю, heating-қыздыру.

Герундий нысанының кестесі.

	Active	Passive
--	--------	---------

Indefinite Perfect	Writing Having written	Being written Having been written
-----------------------	---------------------------	--------------------------------------

Герундийдің синтаксистік қызметі

Қызметі	Мысалы	Аударма
1. бастауыш	1. Smoking is not allowed here.	Мында темекі тартуға мында рұқсат жоқ.
2. Атаулы курделі бастауыш құрамында	2. His hobby is driving a car.	Оның сүйген кәсібі машина жүргізу.
3. толықтауыш А) тура Б) жанама	A) The car needs repairing B) They spoke about their traveling to the north.	Машинаны жөндеуді қажет етеді. Олар солтүстікке жол сапар туралы айтты.
4. анықтауыш	There are different ways of obtaining this substance.	Бұл затты алудың әртүрлі жолы бар.
5. пысықтауыш	After receiving good results they stopped experiments.	Жақсы қортынды алып олар экспериментті тоқтаты.

Қорытынды:

- 1) Бастауыш, атаулы курделі баяндауыш құрамында тура толықтауыш ретінде герундий зат есім немесе тұйық етістік арқылы аударылады.
- 2) Жанама толықтауыш функциясында герундий зат есіммен немесе бағыныңқы сөйлеммен аударылады.
- 3) Пысықтауыш функциясында герундий зат есіммен, көсемше немесе бағыныңқы сөйлеммен аударылады.
- 4) Құрмалас герундий нысандары жиі бағыныңқы сөйлеммен аударылады.

Мысалы: I know of his having been appointed a new job.

Оның жаңа жұмысқа тағайындалғанын мен білемін.

Есімше (The Participle).

Ағылшын тілінде есімше етістіктің жіктелмеген формасы. Ағылшын есімшесі сөйлемде анықтауыштың немесе пысықтауыштың қызметін атқарады.

Есімше формалары.

Өзінен кейін тура толықтауышты қабылдайтын етістіктердің негізгі етісте екі есімше формасы және ырықсыз етісте үш есімше формасы бар.

Present	asking	being asked
Past	-	asked
Perfect	having asked	having been asked

Өзінен кейін тура толықтауышты қабылдамайтын етістіктердің тек негізгі етісте үш есімше формасы бар.

Есімшенің жай формалары.

Есімшенің жай формаларының жасалуы.

Present Participle Active.

Present Participle Active етістіктің инфинитив формасына (to бөлшегінсіз) –**ing** жалғауын жалғау арқылы жасалады.

to read оқу **reading** оқып жатырған.

to buy сатып алу, **buying** сатып алып жатырған.

Past Participle Active және Passive.

Past Participle Active және Passive дұрыс етістіктердің инфинитив формасына –ed жалғау арқылы жасалады.

to ask сұрау asked сұраған, сұралған.

Past Participle бұрыс етістіктерден әртүрлі жолмен жасалады.

to give беру given

to send жіберу sent

to buy сатып алу bought

Not болымсыз бөлшегі есімшенің алдына қойылады:

not asking – сұрамай, not sold - сатылмаған, т.б.

Есімшенің жай формаларының қолданылуы.

Present Participle Active:

I. Анықтауыш функциясын атқарады.

1) Зат есім алдында.

The rising sun was hidden by the clouds.

Көтерілген күнді бұлттар жапты.

2) Зат есімнен кейін. Present Participle сөйлем баяндауышымен қатар жүрген істі білдіреді.

The boy playing in the garden is my sister's son.

Бақта ойнап жүрген бала менің апамның баласы.

II. Пысықтауыш функциясын атқарады.

1) Мезгіл пысықтауыш.

Waiting for a tram, I saw Peter.

Трамвайды күтіп тұрып, мен Петрді көрдім.

2) Себеп-салдар пысықтауыш.

Knowing English well, he translated the article without a dictionary.

Ағылшын тілін жақсы біле отырып ол мақаланы сөздіксіз аударды.

3) Қимыл-сын пысықтауыш.

He walked down the road limping.

Ол ақсақтап жолмен жүрді.

Past Participle Passive анықтауыш функциясын атқарады.

А) Зат есім алдында.

A broken cup lay on the table.

Сынған кесе үстелде жатты.

Б) Зат есімнен кейін.

All books taken from the library must be returned next week.

Кітапханадан алынған барлық кітаптар келесі жұмада қайтарылуы керек.

Есімшенің күрделі формасы.

Perfect Participle Active жасалуы және қолданылуы.

Perfect Participle Active Present Participle формасындағы көмекші етістік to have және Present Participle формасындағы негізгі етістік арқылы жасалады (having asked). Perfect Participle Active сөйлем баяндауышы көрсететін іске дейін аяқталған істі көрсетеді және себеп-салдар және мезгіл пысықтауыш функциясын атқарады.

Having lost the key, he couldn't enter the room.

Кілтін жоғалтып алып ол бөлмеге кіре алмады.

«Объектік септік осы шақтың есімшесімен» құрылымы.

Сезім мүшелері арқылы қабылдауды білдіретін етістіктерінен (to see-көру, to watch-қарау, to notice -байқау, to hear-есту, to feel-сезу) кейін «объектік септік осы шақтың есімшесімен» құрылымы қолданылады. Ол объектік септік есімдігі немесе жалпы септіктегі зат есім мен осы шақтың есімшесі (Present Participle) байланысын көрсетеді.

I saw him running. Мен оның жүгіргенін көрдім.

«Объектік септік инфинитивпен» құрылымы аяқталған істі көрсетсе, «объектік септік есімшемен» құрылымы істеліп жатырған істі көрсетеді.

I saw him crossing the street. - Мен оның көшені кесіп өтіп бара жатырғанын көрдім. I saw him cross the street. - Мен оның көшені кесіп өткенін көрдім.

Үстеу (The Adverb).

Іс-қимылдық күй жайын білдіретін сөз табы үстеу деп аталады. Үстеу етістікке қатысты және де сөйлемде пысықтауыш қызметін атқарады.

He walks quickly. Ол жылдам жүреді.

I didn't see him yesterday. Мен оны кеше көрген жоқпын.

Үстеуді мағынасына қарай топтау және оның сөйлемдегі орны.

Мекен үстеулер.

Мекен үстеулерге келесі сөздер жатады: here-осында, there-онда, where-қайда, somewhere, anywhere-бір жерде, nowhere-еш жерде, elsewhere-бір жерде, басқа жақта, far-алыс, near-жақын, inside-ішінде, outside-сыртында, above-жоғарыда, below-төменде.

We saw beautiful flowers there. Біз ана жақтан әдемі гүлдерді көрдік.

He went somewhere on Sunday. Ол жексенбі күні бір жерге барып келді.

Мезгіл үстеулер.

1) Мезгіл үстеулерге келесі сөздер жатады: always-әрқашан, қашанда, often-жиі, seldom-сирек, ever-қашан да болса, never-еш уақытта, ешқашанда, just-қазір ғана, already-енді, әлдеқашан, still-тағы, әлі, soon-жақын арада, usually-әдетте.

He always comes early. Ол әрқашан ерте келеді.

2) Келесі үстеулер сөйлемнің басында немесе сөйлемнің соңында тұрады: today- бүгін, tomorrow-ертең, yesterday-кеше, afterwards- аяғында, sometimes- кейде, then-сол уақытта, сол кезде, сонда, онда, now- қазір, енді.

I shall go there tomorrow. Tomorrow I shall go there. Мен онда ертең барамын.

I go there sometimes. Sometimes I go there. Мен онда кейде барамын.

3) Келесі сөздер ереже бойынша сөйлемнің соңында тұрады: lately-соңғы уақытта, recently- жақында, жақын арада, before- бұрын, since- содан бері.

I have seen this film before. Мен бұл фильмді бұрын көрдім.

I have not been there lately. Мен соңғы уақытта сонда болған жоқпын

Мөлшер үстеулер.

Мөлшер үстеулерге келесі сөздер жатады: very-өте, тым, аса, too-тым, өте, so- сондай, rather-әжептәуір, едәуір, almost, nearly-дерлік, hardly, scarcely-әрең, much far, by far-анағұрлым, едәуір, quite-мүлде, not at all-мүлде басқа, much-көп, little- аз.

He is very old. Ол өте қарт кісі.

This story is rather interesting. Әңгіме едәуір қызықты.

I could hardly understand him. Мен оны әрең түсіндім.

Қимыл – сын үстеулер.

Қимыл – сын үстеулерге келесі сөздер жатады: well-жақсы, fast, quickly-тез, slowly-ақырын, бәсең, quietly-тыныш, қозғалмай, асықпай, жай, easily-оңай, жеңіл.

He walked slowly. Ол ақырындап жүрді.

The sun shines brightly. Күн сәулесін төгіп тұр.

Үстеулердің шырайлары.

1) Бір буынды үстеулер салыстырмалы шырайын -er жұрнағы, ал күшейтпелі шырайын -est жұрнағы арқылы жасайды.

Fast- тез	faster-тезірек	fastest-өте тез
Late-кеш	later-кештеу	latest-өте кеш
Soon-шапшаң	sooner-шапшаңырақ	soonest-бәрінен

шапшаң

Early-ерте	earlier-ертерек	earliest-өте ерте
------------	-----------------	-------------------

2) Сын есімнен -ly жұрнағын жалғап жасалған үстеулердің салыстырмалы шырайы more, ал күшейтпелі шырайы сын most сөздері арқылы жасалады.

Clearly –түсінікті more clearly- түсініктірек most clearly- бәрінен түсінікті.

Correctly-дұрыс more correctly- дұрысырақ most correctly-бәрінен дұрыс

3) Бұл үстеулерді жаттап алу керек:

well-жақсы	better- жақсырақ	best-бәрінен жақсы
badly- жаман	worse- жамандау	worst-бәрінен жаман
much-көп	more-көптеу	most-бәрінен көп
little-аз	less-аздау	least-бәрінен аз
far –алыс	farther-алысырақ	farthest-бәрінен алыс

Көмекші сөздер (The Preposition).

Сөйлемдегі зат есімнің басқа сөздерге қатысын көрсететін көмекші сөздер демеуліктер деп аталады.

About.

1) Көмекші сөз **about** *жуық, шамасында, шамамен, туралы* деп аударылады.

He told us about his trip to the south. Ол оңтүстікке сапары туралы әңгімелеп берді.

It is about five o'clock. Қазір сағат шамамен бес.

Above.

2) Көмекші сөз **above** *жоғары, астам, артық* деп аударылады.

The temperature was above zero. Температура нөлден жоғары болды.

There were above 200 people. Онда 200 астам адам болды.

Across.

3) Көмекші сөз **across** *көлденен, арқылы* деп аударылады.

The boy ran across the street. Бала көшені кесіп жүгіріп өтті.

Put this log across. Мына бөренені көлдеңінен қой.

After.

4) Көмекші сөз **after** *кейін* деп аударылады.

He continued his work after dinner. Ол өзінің жұмысын түстен
кейін жалғастырды.

Shut the door after you, please. Өзіңнен кейін есікті жапшы.

Against.

5) Көмекші сөз **against** *қарсы* деп аударылады.

We were against it. Біз бұған қарсы болдық.

Along.

6) Көмекші сөз **along** *бойлай, жағалай* деп аударылады.

Let us walk along the shore. Жаға бойымен жүрейік.

Among (Amongst).

7) Көмекші сөз **among** *арасында* деп аударылады.

The work was divided among four children. Жұмыс төрт балаға бөлінді.

At.

8) Көмекші сөз **at** *маңында, жанында, қасында* деп аударылады.

He lives at the club. Ол клубтың жаңында тұрады.

She is sitting at the window. Ол терезенің қасында отыр.

Before

9) Көмекші сөз **before** *дейін, шейін, алдында* деп аударылады.

We shall have a walk before dinner. Біз түскі тамақтың алдында
серуендейміз.

He sat before me. Ол менің алдыма отырды.

Behind.

10) Көмекші сөз **behind** *артында, артынан* деп аударылады.

He sat behind me. Ол менің артымда отырды.

Below.

11) Көмекші сөз **below** *астына, астында, төмен* деп аударылады.

The temperature was below zero. Температура нөлден төмен болды.

Beside.

12) Көмекші сөз **beside** *қасында* деп аударылады.

He was sitting beside me. Ол менің қасымда отырды.

Between.

13) Көмекші сөз **between** *арасында* деп аударылады.

The Mediterranean Sea is between Europe and Africa. Жерорта теңізі Еуропа мен Африканың арасында орналасқан.

By.

14) Көмекші сөз **by** ырықсыз етістегі етістіктен кейін істі атқарушыны айтқанда, іс-уақытын көрсеткенде қолданылады және *-мен, -пен* жалғауларымен, *таман* деп аударылады.

“Anna Karenina” was written by Tolstoi . «Анна Каренинаны» Толстой жазды.

Can you finish the work by 6 o'clock? Сіз бұл жұмысты сағат алтыға таман бітіресіз бе?

Down.

15) Көмекші сөз **down** *астында, төменде* деп аударылады.

He went down the stairs. Ол баспалдақпен төмен түсті.

During.

16) Көмекші сөз **During** кезінде, бойы деп аударылады.

During the year he has made great progress. Жыл бойы ол үлкен табыстарға жетті.

Except.

17) Көмекші сөз **except** *басқа, қоспағанда* деп аударылады.

Everybody is ready except you. Сізден басқасы бәрі дайын.

For.

18) Көмекші сөз **for** *үшін, арналған, артынан* деп аударылады.

He will do it for you. Ол осыны сіз үшін істейді.

I sent him for the doctor. Мен оны дәрігерге жібердім.

From.

19) Көмекші сөз **from** *-нан, -нен, -дан, -ден, -тан, -тен* деп аударылады.

I shall stay in the library from five till seven. Мен кітапханада бестен жетіге дейін боламын.

In.

20) Көмекші сөз **in** мерзімді, мезгілді көрсеткенде айтылады және *-да, -де,*

-та, -те жалғауларымен аударылады.

In January. Қаңтарда.

They will arrive in May. Олар мамырда келеді.

He will return in a week. Ол бір жұмадан кейін келеді.

Off.

21) Көмекші сөз **off** заттың бетінен, бөлініп алынған кезде қолданылады.

He took all the things off the table. Ол бүкіл заттарды үстел үстінен жинады

The cat fell off the roof. Мысық төбеден құлап түсті.

On.

22) Егер де зат есімдер *үстінде* немесе *үстіне* деген жағдайда көмекші сөз **on** қолданылады, сонымен қатар күн аттары, күн жатысы алдында қолданылады:

The telegram is lying on the table. Жедел хат үстелдің үстінде жатыр.

I was there on Tuesday. Мен онда сейсенбі күні болдым.

We returned to Moscow on the 1th of September. Біз Мәскеуге бірінші қыркүйекте қайтып оралдық.

Out of.

23) Көмекші сөз **out of** бір нәрсенің ішінен бағытты көрсету мақсатында қолданылады.

He walked out of the house. Ол үйден шықты.

He ran out of the room. Ол бөлмеден жүгіріп шықты

Over.

24) Көмекші сөз **over** *жоғары, үстінде, жоғарыдан* деп аударылады.

An air plane flew over the town. Қаланың үстінен ұшақ ұшып шықты.

There were over a hundred people at the meeting. Жиналыста жүзден астам адам болды.

Past.

25) Көмекші сөз **past** *қасынан, жанынан* деп аударылады және уақыт туралы айтылғанда *кейін* деген мағынада пайдаланылады.

He walked past the house. Ол үйдің қасынан өтіп кетті.

It is half past three. Қазір сағат үш жарым.

Round (Around).

26) Көмекші сөз **round (around)** *айнала, айналасында* деп аударылады.

There are many flowers around the house. Үйдің айналасында көп гүлдер бар.

The door is locked, you will have to go round. Есік жабық, сізге үйді айналып өтуге тура келеді.

Since.

27) Көмекші сөз **since** мезгіл үстеумен қолданылады: **since when** - *қашаннан бері*, **since then** - *содан бері*.

He left Moscow last year and I have not seen him since. Ол өткен жылы Мәскеуден кетіп қалды және мен оны содан бері көргенім жоқ.

Through.

28) Көмекші сөз **through** *арқылы, ішімен* деп аударылады
He was walking through the forest. Ол орман арқылы келді.

Till (Until).

29) Көмекші сөз **till (until)** *дейін, шейін* деп аударылады.
I'll stay here till (until) Monday. Мен дүйсенбіге дейін осында қаламын.
I shall work from nine to (till) three. Мен сағат тоғыздан үшке дейін жұмыс істеймін.

To.

30) Егер де сөйлемде бағыт көрсетілсе, онда көмекші сөз **to** қолданылады.
They went to the Crimea. Олар Қырымға кетті.
He came to the meeting at 5 o'clock. Ол жиналысқа сағат бесте келді.

Towards.

31) Көмекші сөз **towards** *қарай, бағытында* деп аударылады.
He was walking towards the sea. Ол теңізге қарай бара жатырды.
The ship sailed towards the south. Кеме оңтүстікке қарай жүзіп бара жатырды.

Under.

32) Көмекші сөз **under** *астында* деп аударылады.
He was lying under a tree. Ол ағаштың астында жатырды.
He put the basket under the table. Ол кәрзеңкені үстелдің астына қойды.

Up.

33) Көмекші сөз **up** *жоғары, өрге* деп аударылады.
He went up the stairs. Ол баспалдақпен жоғары көтеріліп кетті.
The steamer sailed up the river. Параход өзенмен жоғары қарай жүзді.

Одағай. (The Interjection).

Одағайлар адамның көңіл күйін, ішкі сезімін білдіру үшін қолданылатын сөздер. His father, alas, is no better. Әттең, оның әкесі әлі жақсы сезінбейді.

Oh! How you frightened me. Ah, мені сондай қорқытып жібердің.

Синтаксис.

1) Аяқталған ойды білдіретін сөз тіркестері сөйлем деп аталады.

The sun rises in the east. Күн шығыстан шығады.

2) Сөйлем мүшелері тұрлаулы және тұрлаусыз болып екіге бөлінеді.

Тұрлаулы сөйлем мүшелеріне: бастауыш (Subject) және баяндауыш (The Predicate) жатады.

Сөйлемнің тұрлаусыз мүшелері: толықтауыш (The Object), анықтауыш (The Attribute), пысықтауыш (the Adverbial Modifiers).

3) Сөйлем құрамына қарай жай және құрмалас болып екіге бөлінеді. Құрмалас сөйлемдердің өзі сабақтас және салалас болып екіге бөлінеді.

The agreement was signed, and the delegation left Moscow.

Келісімге қол қойылды және, делегация Мәскеуден кетті. (салалас құрмалас сөйлем)

4) Айтылу мақсатына байланысты сөйлемдер 4 түрге бөлінеді:

A) Хабарлы сөйлем (Declarative Sentences).

The library is on the second floor. Кітапхана екінші қабатта.

Б) Сұраулы сөйлем (Interrogative sentences)

When did you come? Сіз қашан келдіңіз?

В) Бұйрықты сөйлем (Imperative Sentences)

Open the door, please. Есікті ашыңызшы.

Г) Лепті сөйлем (Exclamatory Sentences)

What a nice girl! Қандай сүйкімді қыз!

СӨЙЛЕМ МҮШЕЛЕРІ (Parts of the Sentence)

Бастауыш.

Бастауыш сөйлемде Кім? Не? Деген сұраққа жауап береді.

The lesson has begun. Сабақ басталды.

She has come. Ол келді.

Бастауыш it.

Ағылшын тіліндегі жақсыз сөйлемдерде бастауыш it- есімдігі арқылы көрсетіледі.

А) Табиғат құбылыстарын хабарлағанда.

It is winter. Қыс.

It is hot. Ыстық.

Б) Етістіктер арқылы ауа райын көрсеткеде: to rain, to snow, to freeze.

It often snows in February. Ақпанда жиі қар жауады.

It is raining (now). (Қазір) жаңбыр жауып тұр.

В) Сөйлемдерде уақыт және қашықтық туралы айтылғанда

It is morning. Таң (таңертең)

It is five o'clock. Сағат бес.

It is not far to the river. Өзенге дейін алыс емес.

Баяндауыш. (The Predicate).

Баяндауыш не істеп жатыр? не істеліп жатыр? бұл не? бұл қандай? кім бұл ? деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Баяндауыш жай (The Simple Predicate) және күрделі (The Compound Predicate) болады. Күрделі баяндауыштың өзі атаулы күрделі және етістік күрделі баяндауыш болып екіге бөлінеді.

Жай баяндауыш. (The Simple Predicate).

Жай баяндауыш етістік арқылы жеке формада әртүрлі шақта, етісте және райда қолданылған етістіктің жіктелген формасымен көрсетіледі.

They live in the south. Олар оңтүстікте тұрады.

Күрделі атаулы баяндауыш.

Күрделі атаулы баяндауыш етістік “to be” арқылы жасалынады.

The day was cold. Күн салқын болды.

The glass is broken. Стакан сынып қалды.

He is a doctor. Ол дәрігер.

Күрделі етістікті баяндауыш.

Күрделі етістікті баяндауыш сөйлемде модаьдық етістік және инфинитив арқылы көрсетіледі.

You must go there. Сіз сонда баруыңыз қажет.

I have to get up early. Мен ерте тұруым керек.

He can do it. Ол бұны істей алады.

Сөйлемнің тұрлаусыз мүшелері.

Толықтауыш (The Object).

Толықтауыш тура және жанама болып екіге бөлінеді.

Тура толықтауыш.

(The Direct Object).

Тура толықтауыш кімді? Не? деген сұрақтарға жауап береді. Тура толықтауыш сөйлемде зат есім және есімдік арқылы көрсетіледі.

He bought a radio-set yesterday. Кеше ол радио қабылдағыш сатып алды.

Жанама толықтауыш (The Indirect object).

Жанама толықтауыш көмекші сөзді және көмекші сөздерсіз болады. Көмекші сөздерсіз жанама толықтауыш кімге деген сұраққа, көмекші сөзді жанама толықтауыш кім туралы? about whom? about what? не туралы? with whom? кіммен? for whom? кім үшін? Деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Мысалы: He gave the boy a book. Ол балаға кітап берді.

We spoke about our work. Біз өз жұмысымыз туралы сөйлестік.

Анықтауыш (The attribute).

Анықтауыш қандай? кімдікі? неше? қанша? деген сұрақтарға жауап береді. Анықтауыш сөйлемдерде сын есім, есімше, сан есім, есімдік және зат есіманықтауыш болады.

I received on important letter yesterday. Мен кеше маңызды хат алдым.

The second lesson begins at eleven o'clock. Екінші сабақ сағат 11-де басталады.

Пысықтауыш (Adverbial Modifiers).

Пысықтауыш қалай? қашан? неге? не үшін? деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Пысықтауыш сөйлемдерде көрсетеді:

1) **Мезгіл.**

She will come soon. Ол жақын арада келді.

2) Мекен.

I found him in the garden. Мен оны бақтан таптым.

3) Қимыл-сын.

He spoke slowly. Ол жай сөйледі.

4) Себеп-салдар.

I came back because of the rain. Жаңбыр жауғандықтан мен қайтып келдім.

5) Мақсат.

I have come to discuss the matter. Мен бұл сұрақты талқылауға келдім.

6) Жалғас жағдайын

He sat at the table reading a newspaper. Ол үстелдің қасында газет оқып отырды.

7) Дәрежесін

I quite agree with her. Мен онымен толық келісемін.

Жай сөйлемдер.

Жай жалаң сөйлемдер.

Жалаң сөйлемдер негізгі тұрлаулы мүшелерден тұрады
The girl stopped. Қыз тоқтап қалды.

Жай жайылма сөйлемдер.

Сөйлемде тұрлаулы мүшелерден басқа бір немесе бірнеше тұрлаусыз мүшелер болған жағдайда сөйлем жай жайылма сөйлем деп аталады.

The girl stopped at the gate. Қыз қақпаның қасына тоқталды.

The little girl took the book. Кішкентай қыз кітапты алды.

Хабарлы сөйлем.

(Declarative sentences).

Хабарлы сөйлем әңгімелесушіге немесе оқырманға бір нәрсені хабарлау үшін қолданылады.

Ағылшын тіліндегі хабарлы сөйлемдегі сөйлем мүшелерінің орын тәртібі:

1) Бастауыш, 2) Баяндауыш, 3) Толықтауыш, 4) Пысықтауыш

I received a letter yesterday- Мен кеше хат алдым.

Толықтауыштың сөйлемдегі орны.

Сөйлемде толықтауыш келесі сөз тәртібімен тұрады: а) тура толықтауыш сөйлемдерде етістіктен кейін тұрады.

Мыс: I bought a radio-set. Мен радио қабылдағыш сатып алдым.

а) Көмекші сөздерсіз жанама толықтауыш сөйлемдерде етістіктің және тура толықтауыштың арасында тұрады.

I send my father a telegram. Мен әкеме жеделхат жібердім.

в) Көмекші сөздер жанама толықтауыш тура толықтауыштан кейін тұрады.

I received a telegram from my father. Мен кеше әкемнен жедел хат алдым.

Сөйлемдегі пысықтауыштың орны.

Сөйлемдерде пысықтауыш келесі сөз тәртібімен тұрады.

а) Қимыл-сын пысықтауыш сөйлемдерде толықтауыштан кейін тұрады.

I have read the letter with great pleasure. Мен хатты рақаттанып оқыдым.

б) Мекен пысықтауыш қимыл-сын пысықтауыштан кейін тұрады..

I met him by chance at the theatre. Мен оны кездейсоқ театрда көрдім.

в) Мезгіл пысықтауыш сөйлемдерде мекен пысықтауыштан кейін тұрады, яғни сөйлемнің соңында тұрады.

I met him in the park on Sunday. Мен оны жексенбіде паркте көрдім.

Хабарлы болымсыз сөйлем.

Ағылшын тілінде болымсыз сөйлемдер “not” шылауы арқылы жасалады. “not” баяндауыштың құрамына кіретін көмекші немесе модальдық етістіктен кейін қойылады.

She is not working in the garden. Ол бақта жұмыс жасап жатқан жоқ.

He will not do it.

Ол бұны жасамайды.

He does not live there.

Ол онда тұрмайды.

They did not write a letter to him. Олар оған хат жазған жоқ.

Сұраулы сөйлем. Interrogative sentences.

Сұрақтар арнайы және жалпы болып екіге бөлінеді. Жалпы сұрақтар көмекші немесе модальдық етістіктеден басталады.

Did you see him yesterday? Сіз оны кеше көрдіңіз бе?

Арнайы сұрақта сөйлемдер сұраулы сөз арқылы құрастырылады.
When did you go there? Сіз сонда қашан бардыңыз.

Жалпы сұрақтар (General questions).

Жалпы сұрақта көмекші немесе модальдық етістіктер бастауыштың алдында тұрады.

Жалпы сұрақтың жауабы қысқа болады. /Yes, no/

Do you speak French?	Yes, I do.	No, I don't.
Сіз француз тілінде сөйлейсіз бе?	Иә	Жоқ
Can you swim?	Yes, I can.	No, I can't
Сіз жүзу білісіз бе?	Иә	Жоқ

Балама сұрақтар (Alternative questions)

Балама сұрақ – жауапта екі адамнан, заттан, қимылдан, немесе т.б. бірін таңдауға болатын сұрақ. Бұл адамдар, заттар, қимылдар, қиыметтер және т.б. сөйлемде **or** «немесе» шылауымен байланысқан сөйлемнің бірыңғай мүшелері болады.

Or шылауы дауыссыздан басталатын сөздер алдында [o:], дауыстыдан басталатын сөздер алдында [o:r] болып оқылады.

Is it a pen or a pencil? – It is a pen

Мынау қалам ба әлде карандаш па? – Бұл қалам.

Балама сұрақтың сөз тәртібі жалпы сұрақтың сөз тәртібіндей болады. Бірыңғай сөйлем мүшелерінің біріншісі көтеріңкі дауыс ырғағымен, екіншісі төмен дауыс ырғағымен айтылады.

Арнайы сұрақтар (Special questions).

Арнайы сұрақтар сұраулы сөздерден басталады: who? kim? what? which? қандай? Не?

When? Қашан? Where? Қайда? Why? Неге? How? Қалай? How much? Неше? how long? Қандай ұзақ?

Арнайы сұрақта көмекші немесе модальдық етістіктер алдында көмекші (what, when, where, why) сөздер тұрады.

What did she tell you? Ол сізге не айтты?

Бөлшек сұрақтар (Disjunctive questions).

Бұл сұрақтар жалпы сұрақтар сияқты болымды немесе болымсыз жауапты талап етеді, яғни сұрақта берілген оймен келіседі немесе келіспейді. Ол екі бөліктен тұрады. Бірінші бөлігі хабарлы сөйлем (болымды немесе болымсыз), екінші бөлігі қажетті көмекші (модальды) етістіктен және атау септігіндегі жіктеу есімдігінен тұратын қысқа жалпы сұрақ болады. Егер бірінші бөлігі болымды болса, көмекші (модальды) етістік болымсыз түрде қолданылады, ал бірінші бөлігі болымсыз болса, екіншісі болымды түрде болады.

You bought the tickets, didn't you? – Сіз билеттер алдыңыз, солай емес пе?

He hasn't come from Moscow yet, has he? – Ол әлі Мәскеуден келген жоқ, солай ма?

Бұйрықты сөйлем. (Imperative sentences).

Бұйрық сөйлемдер бұйрықты, өтінішті, кеңесті білдіреді. Бұйрықты сөйлемдер болымды және болымсыз болады. Бұйрық сөйлемдер баядауыштан басталады.

Open the book. Кітапты ашыңызшы.

Өтінішті сұраулы сөйлемдер (will, would арқылы көрсетіледі.)

Will you help me? Көмектесіп жібересіз бе?

Won't you open the window? Терезені ашып жібересіз бе?

Лепті сөйлем.

(Exclamatory sentences)

Егер айтылатын ой таңдануды, шаттануды, наразылықты білдіретін болса, онда хабарлы, сұраулы, бұйрықты сөйлемдер лепті сөйлем болады.

Have you ever seen such weather! Сіз мұндай ауа райын қашан да болса көрдіңіз бе!

Құрмалас сөйлемдер.

Құрмалас сөйлемдер екі немесе бірнеше жай сөйлемдерден тұрады. Құрмалас сөйлемдер екі түрлі болады: салалас (Compound Sentences) және сабақтас (Complex Sentences)

Салалас құрмалас сөйлем. (The Compound Sentences)

Салалас сөйлемдер екі тең дәрежедегі жай сөйлемдерден құрастырылады.

I came home early, but he remained to the end of the concert.

Мен үйге ерте келдім, ал ол концерт біткенше қалды.

Сабақтас сөйлем. (Complex Sentences).

Құрамындағы жай сөйлемдердің бірінің баяндауышы тиянақсыз болып екінші сөйлемге бағына байланысқан құрмалас сөйлем сабақтас құрмалас сөйлем деп аталады. Тиянақты тұрған сөйлемді басыңқы, ойды толық аяқтап тұрған сөйлемді бағынқы деп атайды.

Бағыныңқы сөйлемнің түрлері.

Бағыныңқы сөйлем құрмалас сөйлемде белгілі бір сөйлем мүшесінің функциясын атқарады.

Сөйлем мүшелері

Бастауыш

What is interesting?

Қызықты не?

This book is interesting

Бұл кітап қызықты.

Бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.

Бастауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.

What you say is interesting

Сіздің айтқаныңыз қызықты?

Бастауыш бағыныңқы сөйлем. (Subject Clauses).

Бастауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді: Who? Kim? What? He?. Басыңқы сөйлем бағыныңқы сөйлеммен келесі жалғаулықтар: **that- сондай, whether, if-ба, бе, на, не, ма, ме.**

Және шылаулы үстеулер арқылы байланысады: who- кім?

Whose-кімнің

What-не

Which-қандай

When-қашан

Where-қайда

How- қалай

Why- неге

That he has refused to help you is very strange. Оның сізге көмектесуден бас тартқаны өте өкінішті.

Баяндауыш бағыныңқы сөйлем . (Predicative Clauses).

Баяндауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді: **what is the subject?** *Бастауыш не?*

Мысалы: What is the subject like? Бастауыш мағынасы қалай?

Толықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлем. (Object Clauses).

Толықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді: **what? не? about what? не туралы? For what? Неге? Не үшін?**

Мысалы: He told us that he felt ill.

Ол өзінің ауырып отырғанын бізге айтты

Төл және төлеу сөз. (Direct and indirect speech).

Егерде біреудің сөзін сөзбе-сөз басқа біреу айтып берсе, оны төл сөз деп атаймыз. Ал біреудің сөзін сөзбе-сөз айтпай, оның тек мазмұнын айтса бұл төлеу сөз деп аталады.

Direct speech

He has just said, "Peter will come on Sunday"

Ол жаңа айтты "Петр жексенбіде келеді"

Indirect speech

He has just said that Peter will come on Sunday

Ол Петрдің жексенбіде келетінін жаңа айтты.

Анықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер. "Attributive clauses"

Бұл сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді: **What? Which? Қандай?** олар басыңқылы сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады:

Есімдіктер - **who? кім? whom? кімді? whose? кімнің? which? that?**

Және үстеу сөздер: **when? Қашан? where? қайда?**

Мысалы: The man who was here yesterday is a painter.

Кеше мұнда болған адам суретші.

I have found the book which I was looking for.
Мен іздеген жүрген кітапты тауып алдым.

Пысықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлем. Adverbial Clauses

Пысықтауыш бағыныңқылы сөйлемдер мағынасына қарай келесі пысықтауыш сөйлемдерге бөлінеді.

1. Мезгіл
2. Мекен
3. Себеп-салдар
4. Нәтиже
5. Қимыл-сын
6. Қарсылықты
7. Мақсат
8. Шартты

Мезгіл бағыныңқы сөйлемдер. (Adverbial clauses of time)

Мезгіл бағыныңқы сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді.

When? *Қашан?* **Since when?** *Қашаннан бері?* **How long?** *Қандай ұзақ?*

Бұл сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулықтар арқылы байланысады.

When? *қашан?* **While** *сол екі арада, as* *қалайда, мүмкіндігінше,* **after** *–кейін,* **before** *– дейін,* **till, untill** *– дейін,* **since, as soon as..**

Мекен бағыныңқы сөйлемдер. (Adverbial clauses of place).

Мекен бағыныңқы сөйлемдер келесі сұрақтарға жауап береді:
Where? *Қайда?* **From where?** *Қай жақтан?* Олар басыңқы сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады

Where? *Қайда?* **Wherever,** *қайда болса да.*

Мысалы: He went where the doctor sent him.

Ол дәрігер жіберген жерге барды.

Себеп-салдар бағыныңқы сөйлемдер. (Adverbial clauses of cause).

Себеп-салдар бағыныңқы сөйлемдер **Why?** деген сұраққа жауап береді. Олар негізгі сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы жалғасады: **because, as, since, for.**

As there were no porters, we had to carry the luggage ourselves.

Жүк тасушылар болмағандықтан, жүгімізді өзімізге алып жүруге тура келді.

**Қимыл-сын бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.
(Adverbial clauses of manner).**

Қимыл-сын бағыныңқы сөйлемдердің қимыл-амалы how? (қалай) деген сұраққа жауап береді.

Олар басыңқы сөйлемдер мен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады.as, as if, that.

Мыс: You answer as if you did not know this rule.

Сіз мына ережені білмейтіндей жауап бересіз.

**Нәтиже бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.
(Adverbial clauses of result).**

Нәтиже бағыныңқы сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады: so that, so.

Мыс: He went to the lecture early so that he got a good seat.

Ол лекцияға ерте барғандықтан жақсы орынға отырды.

**Қарсылықты бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.
(Adverbial clauses of concession).**

Қарсылықты бағыныңқы сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемдер мен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады:

Though (although), in spite of the fact that, not with – standing that, whoever, no matter what, no matter how.

Мысалы: Though (although) it was only nine o'clock, there were few people in the streets-Сағат тоғыз болғанына қарамастан көшеде адам аз болды.

**Мақсат бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.
(Adverbial clauses of purpose).**

Мақсат бағыныңқы сөйлемдер **what for? (неге?) for what? (қандай мақсатпен?)** деген сұрақтарға жауап береді.

Мыс: Close the window so that it will be warm in the room.

Бөлмеде жылы болуы үшін терезені жабыңыз.

**Шартты бағыныңқы сөйлемдер.
(Adverbial clauses of condition).**

Шартты бағыныңқы сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемдермен келесі жалғаулық сөздер арқылы байланысады: **if, unless, provided (that), providing (that) on condition (that).**

Мыс: If I see him tomorrow, I shall ask him about it.

Мен оны ертең көрсем бұл туралы одан сұраймын.

Conditional sentences.

Шартты сөйлемдер.

§17. Шартты сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемдегі істің орындалу шартын, уақытын көрсетеді. Шартты сөйлемдердің үш түрі (реальді, күмәнді, және реальсіз) бар.

Шартты сөйлемдердің бірінші түрі.

Шартты сөйлемдердің бірінші түрі келер шақты істің орындалу шартын көрсетеді. Бағыныңқы сөйлемде етістік Present Indefinite-те, ал басыңқы сөйлемде Future Indefinite-те тұрады.

Басыңқы сөйлемнің етістікгі бұйрық райда да тұруы мүмкін.

Мысалы: If the weather is good, we shall go skiing.

Егер күн жақсы болса, біз шаңғы тебеміз.

Шартты сөйлемдердің екінші түрі.

Осы немесе келер шақта істің іске асуына күмән білдіру үшін қолданылады.

Бағыңқы сөйлемнің етістігі Past Subjunctive формасында, ал басыңқы сөйлемде should/would+Indefinite Infinitive қолданылады.

Мысалы: If the plant landed, they would let us know about it.

Егер ұшақ жерге қонса, олар бізге хабарлар еді.

Шартты сөйлемдердің үшінші түрі.

Шартты сөйлемдердің үшінші түрі өткен шақтағы істің орындалу шартын көрсетеді. Реальсіз шартты өткен шақта көрсету үшін басыңқы сөйлемнің етістігі – should, would+ Perfect Infinitive формасында, ал бағыңқы сөйлем етістігі .

Past Perfect Subjunctive формасында қолданылады.

Мысалы: If the weather conditions had been favorable, the construction of the bridge would have been completed in time.

Егерде ауа райы қолайлы болғанда, көпір құрылысы уақытында аяқталған болар еді.

Тыныс белгілері. (Punctuation marks).

Үтір. (The comma).

Жай сөйлемдегі үтір.

Жай сөйлемде үтір қойылады:

1) Сөйлемдердің бірыңғай мүшелерін ажыратуда:

Мысалы: There are many theatres, museums and libraries in Moscow.

Мәскеуде көптеген театрлар, мұражайлар және кітапханалар бар.

2) Айқындауыш сөздерді айыру үшін.

Мысалы: Pushkin, the great Russian poet, was born in 1799.

Пушкин, ұлы орыс поэты, 1799 жылы дүниеге келді.

3) Қыстырма сөздерді айыру үшін.

Мысалы: Fortunately, the fire was discovered before it did much damage.

Бақытқа қарай, өртті үлкен кесел келтірмес бұрын көрді.

4) Қаратпа сөзді айыру үшін.

Мысалы: Helen, where is my red pencil?

Елена, менің қызыл қарандашым қайда?

5) Күн жатысын жылдан айыру үшін.

Мысалы: The contract was concluded on the 15-th September, 1961.

Келісімге 1961 жылы 15 қыркүйекте отырды.

Құрмалас сөйлемдегі үтір.

1) Салалас құрмалас сөйлемдерде үтір екі жай сөйлемнің арасына, шылаудың алдынан қойылады.

Мысалы: At last the rain stopped, and the sun come out.

Ақырында жаңбыр жауып болды және күн шықты.

2) Сабақтас құрмалас сөйлемдер.

А) Бастауыш, баяндауыш және толықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер үтірмен айырылмайды.

Мысалы: How this happened is not clear to anyone.

Бұның қалай болғаны ешкімге түсініксіз.

В) Анықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер суреттейтін жағдайда үтірмен айырылады.

Мысалы: I spoke to my teacher, who promised to help me.

Маған көмектесуге сөз берген мұғаліммен мен сөйлестім.

С) Пысықтауыш бағыныңқы сөйлемдер басыңқы сөйлемнің алдында тұрса үтірмен айырылады.

Мысалы: If I see him, I shall tell him about it.

Егер мен оны көрсем, оған бұл жөнінде айтамын.

Нүктелі үтір.(The Semicolon)

Нүктелі үтір салалас қөрмалас сөйлемнің құрамындағы жай сөйлемдерді байланыстыратын жалғаулықтар болмаған жағдайда қойылады.

He will return from Moscow in June; His sister will stay there another month.

Ол Мәскеуден шілдеде оралады; Оның апасы тағы бір айға сонда қалады.

Қос нүкте.(The Colon)

Қос нүкте қойылады:

1) Цитата алдында.

2) Төл сөздегі ұзақ мәтін алдында.

Мысалы: He said: “We agree to accept your offer if you reduce the price by 10 p.s.”

« Егер сіз бағаны 10 пайызға төмендетсеңіз біз сіздің ұсынысыңызды қабылдауға келісеміз» - деді ол.

3) Бірыңғай сөйлем мүшелері алдында.

Мысалы: The agreement provides for the delivery of the following raw materials:

cotton, wool, jute and others.

Келісім келесі шикізаттарды әкелуді қарастырады: мақта, жүн,

және т.б.

Нүкте. (The full stop or the period)

Нүкте қойылады:

1) Хабарлы және бұйрықты сөйлемдердің соңында:

Мысалы: The goods were shipped yesterday.

Заттар кеше тиелді.

Open the window.

Терезені ашыңыз.

2) Қысқарған сөздерде.

Мысалы: Mr.- Mister Mrs. – Misstress

Co. – Company Ltd. - Limited

Сұрақ белгісі. (The Note of Interrogation).

Сұраулы сөйлемдердің соңында сұрау белгісі қойылады.

Мысалы: Where is my red pencil?

Менің қызыл қарындашым қайда?

Леп белгісі. (The Note of Exclamation).

Күшті сезімді білдіретін сөйлемдер соңында леп белгісі қойылады
Мысалы: How glad I am to see you !

Сізді көргеніме қандай Қуаныштымын!

What a building ! -Қандай тамаша Ғимарат!

Тырнақша (The Inverted Commas).

Тырнақшалар төл сөздің немесе цитаттаның басында және аяғында қойлады. Нүкте сөйлем соңында тырнақша алдында қойлады.

He said, “She will come in the evening”.

«Ол кешке келеді», - деді ол.

Айшықша (Апостраф – The apostrophe).

Айшықша (апостраф) белгісі сөздегі әріптердің жазылмағанын көрсетеді: it's – it is, don't – do not, we're – we are, 'phone – telephone.

Айшықша (апостраф) белгісі зат есімдердің тәуелдік септігінің жалғауында кездеседі: 's, ' - Peter's, boy's, workers', boys'.

Дефис немесе сызықша. (The Hyphen)

Қосарланған күрделі сөздердің арасында дефис қойылады: reading-room - оқырмандар залы, dark-blue - қара-көк.

Кестелер

To ask етістігінің жіктелуі.

Ашық рай (The Indicative Mood).

Өздік етіс (The Active Voice).

	Indefinite	Continuous	Perfect	Perfect Continuous
Present	I ask He asks We ask You ask They ask	I am asking He is asking We are asking You are asking They are asking	I have asked He has asked We have asked You have asked They have asked	I have been asking He has been asking We have been asking You have been asking They have been asking
	Do I ask?	Am I asking?	Have I asked?	Have I been asking?
	I do not ask	I am not asking	I have not asked	I have not been asking
Past	I asked He asked We asked You asked They asked	I was asking He was asking We were asking You were asking They were asking	I had asked He had asked We had asked You had asked They had asked	I had been asking He had been asking We had been asking You had been asking They had been asking
	Did I ask?	Was I asking?	Had I asked?	Had I been asking?
	I did not ask	I was not asking	I had not asked	I had not been asking

Future	I shall ask He will ask We shall ask You will ask They will ask	I shall be asking He will be asking We shall be asking You will be asking They will be asking	I shall have asked He will have asked We shall have asked You will have asked They will have asked	I shall have been asking He will have been asking We shall have been asking You will have been asking They will have been asking
	Shall I ask?	Shall I be asking?	Shall I have asked?	Shall I have been asking?
	I shall not ask	I shall not be asking	I shall not have asked	I shall not have been asking
Future in the Past	I should ask He would ask We should ask You would ask They would ask	I should be asking He would be asking We should be asking You would be asking They would be asking	I should have asked He would have asked We should have asked You would have asked They would have asked	I should have been asking He would have been asking We should have been asking You would have been asking They would have been asking
	I should not ask	I should not be asking	I should not have asked	I should not have asking

Ырықсыз етіс (The Passive Voice).

	Indefinite	Continuous	Perfect	Perfect Continuous
Present	I am asked He is asked We are asked You are asked They are asked	I am being asked He is being asked We are being asked You are being asked They are being asked	I have been asked He has been asked We have been asked You have been asked They have been asked	- - - - -
	Am I asked?	Am I being asked?	Have I been asked?	-
	I am not asked	I am not being asked	I have not been asked	-
Past	I was asked He was asked We were asked You were asked They were asked	I was being asked He was being asked We were being asked You were being asked They were being asked	I had been asked He had been asked We had been asked You had been asked They had been asked	- - - - -
	Was I asked?	Was I being asked?	Had I been asked?	-
	I was not asked	I was not being asked	I had not been asked	-

Future	I shall be asked He will be asked We shall be asked You will be asked They will be asked	- - - - -	I shall have been asked He will have been asked We shall have been asked You will have been asked They will have been asked	- - - - -
	Shall I be asked?	-	Shall I have been asked?	-
	I shall not be asked	-	I shall not have been asked	-
Future in the Past	I should be asked He would be asked We should be asked You would be asked They would be asked	- - - - -	I should have been asked He would have been asked We should have been asked You would have been asked They would have been asked	- - - - -
	I should not be asked	-	I should not have been asked	-

Бұйрық рай (The Imperative Mood)

ask do not ask

Шартты рай (The Subjunctive Mood). Өздік етіс (The Active Voice).

Бірінші топ		
Present Subjunctive	Past Subjunctive	Past Perfect Subjunctive
I ask He ask We ask You ask They ask	I asked He asked We asked You asked They asked	I had asked He had asked We had asked You had asked They had asked
Екінші топ		
Should+Indefinite Infinitive	Should+Perfect Infinitive	

I should ask He should ask We should ask You should ask They should ask	I should have asked He should have asked We should have asked You should have asked They should have asked
Үшінші топ	
Should (would) +Indefinite Infinitive	Should (would) +Perfect Infinitive
I should ask He would ask We should ask You would ask They would ask	I should have asked He would have asked We should have asked You would have asked They would have asked

Ырықсыз етіс (The Passive Voice)

Бірінші топ		
Present Subjunctive	Past Subjunctive	Past Perfect Subjunctive
I am asked He is asked We are asked You are asked They are asked	I were asked He were asked We were asked You were asked They were asked	I had been asked He had been asked We had been asked You had been asked They had been asked
Екінші топ		
Should+Indefinite Infinitive	Should+Perfect Infinitive	
I should be asked He should be asked We should be asked You should be asked They should be asked	I should have been asked He should have been asked We should have been asked You should have been asked They should have been asked	
Үшінші топ		
Should (would) +Indefinite Infinitive	Should (would) +Perfect Infinitive	
I should be asked He would be asked We should be asked You would be asked They would be asked	I should have been asked He would have been asked We should have been asked You would have been asked They would have been asked	

То be етістігінің жіктелуі. Ашық рай (The Indicative Mood).

	Indefinite	Continuous	Perfect
Present	I am He is We are You are They are	I am being He is being We are being You are being They are being	I have been He has been We have been You have been They have been
	Am I?	Am I being?	Have I been?
	I am not	I am not being	I have not been
Past	I was He was We were You were They were	I was being He was being We were being You were being They were being	I had been He had been We had been You had been They had been
	Was I?	Was I being?	Had I been?
	I was not	I was not being	I had not been
Future	I shall be He will be We shall be You will be They will be	- - - - -	I shall have been He will have been We shall have been You will have been They will have been
	Shall I be?	-	Shall I have been?
	I shall not be	-	I shall not have been
Future in the Past	I should be He would be We should be You would be They would be	- - - - -	I should have been He would have been We should have been You would have been They would have been
	I should not be	-	I should not have been

**Бұйрық рай.
(Imperative Mood).**

Be do not be

**Шартты рай
(The Subjunctive Mood)**

Бірінші топ		
Present Subjunctive	Past Subjunctive	Past Perfect

		Subjunctive
I be He be We be You be They be	I were He were We were You were They were	I had been He had been We had been You had been They had been
Екінші топ		
Should+Indefinite Infinitive	Should+Perfect Infinitive	
I should be He should be We should be You should be They should be	I should have been He should have been We should have been You should have been They should have been	
Үшінші топ		
Should (would) +Indefinite Infinitive	Should (would) +Perfect Infinitive	
I should be He would be We should be You would be They would be	I should have been He would have been We should have been You would have been They would have been	

**To have етістігінің жіктелуі.
Ашық рай (The Indicative Mood).**

	Indefinite	Continuous	Perfect
Present	I have He has We have You have They have	I am having He is having We are having You are having They are having	I have had He has had We have had You have had They have had
	Have I ?	Am I having?	Have I had?
	I have not	I am not having	I have not had
Past	I had He had We had You had They had	I was having He was having We were having You were having They were having	I had had He had had We had had You had had They had had
	Had I ?	Was I having?	Had I had?
	I had not	I was not having	I had not had

Future	I shall have He will have We shall have You will have They will have	I shall be having He will be having We shall be having You will be having They will be having	I shall have had He will have had We shall have had You will have had They will have had
	Shall I have?	Shall I be having?	Shall I have had?
	I shall not have	I shall not be having	I shall not have had
Future in the Past	I should have He would have We should have You would have They would have	I should be having He would be having We should be having You would be having They would be having	I should have had He would have had We should have had You would have had They would have had
	I should not have	I should not be having	I should not have had

**Бұйрық рай.
(The Imperative Mood).**

have do not have

**Шартты рай
(The Subjunctive Mood)**

Бірінші топ		
Present Subjunctive	Past Subjunctive	Past Perfect Subjunctive
I have He have We have You have They have	I had He had We had You had They had	I had He had had We had had You had had They had had
Екінші топ		
Should+Indefinite Infinitive	Should+Perfect Infinitive	
I should have He should have We should have You should have They should have	I should have had He should have had We should have had You should have had They should have had	

Үшінші топ	
Should (would) +Indefinite Infinitive	Should (would) +Perfect Infinitive
I should have He would have We should have You would have They would have	I should have had He would have had We should have had You would have had They would have had

To ask етістігінің жіктелмеген нысандары.

**Тұйық етістік
(The Infinitive).**

	Active	Passive
Indefinite		
Continuous	to ask to be asking	to be asked -
Perfect	to have asked	to have been asked
Perfect Continuous	to have been asking	-

**Герундий
(The Gerund)**

	Active	Passive
Indefinite	asking	being asked
Perfect	having asked	having been asked

**Есімше
(The Participle)**

	Active	Passive
Present	asking	being asked
Past	-	asked
Perfect	having asked	having been asked

To be етістігінің жіктелмеген нысандары.

**Тұйық етістік
(The Infinitive).**

Indefinite	to be
Perfect	to have been

Герундий

(The Gerund)

Indefinite Perfect	being having been
-------------------------------	----------------------

**Есімше
(The Participle)**

Present Past Perfect	being been having been
-------------------------------------	------------------------------

To have етістігінің жіктелмеген нысандары.

**Тұйық етістік
(The Infinitive).**

Indefinite Continuous Perfect	to have to be having to have had
--	--

**Герундий
(The Gerund)**

Indefinite Perfect	having having had
-------------------------------	----------------------

**Есімше
(The Participle)**

Present Past Perfect	having had having had
-------------------------------------	-----------------------------

Бұрыс етістіктер кестесі

Infinitive Тұйық етістік	Past Indefinite Өткен шақтың етістігі	Past Participle Өткен шақ есімшесі	Аудармасы
arise	arose	arisen	шығу
aware	awoke awaked	awoke awaked	ояту; ояну
be	was were	been	болу
bear	bore	born	босану
bear	bore	borne	алып жүру
beat	beat	beaten	соғу
become	became	became	болу
begin	begun	begun	баслау
bend	bent	bent	майыстыру
bind	bound	bound	байлау
bite	bitten	bitten	тістеу
bleed	bled	bled	қан ағу
blow	blew	blown	үрлеу
break	broke	broken	сындыру
breed	bred	bred	шығару
bring	brought	brought	әкелу
broadcast	broadcast broadcasted	broadcast broadcasted	радио мен беру
build	built	built	салу
burn	burnt	burnt	жағу, жану
burst	burst	burst	жарылу
buy	bought	bought	сатып алу
cast	cast	cast	лақтыру
catch	caught	caught	аулау, ұстау
choose	chose	chosen	таңдау
cling	clung	clung	жабысып қалу
come	came	come	келу
cost	cost	cost	тұрады
creep	crept	crept	жорғалау
cut	cut	cut	кесу
deal	dealt	dealt	сату
dig	dug	dug	қазу
do	did	done	жасау
draw	drew	drawn	сурет салу
dream	dreamt dreamed	dreamt dreamd	түс көру арман ету

drink	drank	drunk	ішу
drive	drove	driven	жүргізу
dwell	dwelt	dwelt	тұру, тоқталу
eat	ate	eaten	жеу
fall	fell	fallen	күлау
feed	fed	fed	тамақтандыру
feel	felt	felt	сезу
fight	fought	fought	күресу
find	found	found	тауып алу
flee	fled	fled	жүгіру, қашу
fling	flung	flung	лақтыру
fly	fl w	flown	ұшу
forbid	forbade	forbidden	тиым салу
forget	forgot	forgotten	ұмыту
forgive	forgave	forgiven	кешіру
freeze	froze	frozen	қату
get	got	got	алу, болу
give	gave	given	беру
go	went	gone	жүру
grind	ground	ground	қайрау; уату
grow	g ew	grown	өсу, өсіру
han	hung	hung	іліну, ілу
have	had	had	бар, болу
hear	heard	heard	есту
hid	hid	hid hidden	тығу
hit	hit	hit	ұру, соғу
hold	held	held	ұстау
hurt	hurt	hurt	зақым келтіру
keep	kept	k pt	сақтау
kneel	knelt	knelt	тізе бүктіру
kne	knew	known	білу
lay	laid	laid	қою
lead	led	led	жетектеу
lean	leant leaned	leant leaned	сүйену
leap	leapt leaped	leapt leaped	секіру
learn	learnt learned	learnt learned	оқу
leave	left	left	тастап кету
end	lent	lent	қарыз бер

le	let	let	рұқсат ету
lie	lay	la n	жату
light	lit lighted	lit lighted	жағу
lose	lost	lost	жоғалту
make	made	made	жасау, мәжбүр ету
mean	meant	meant	мағынасы болу
meet	met	met	кездесу
pay	paid	paid	төлеу
put	put	ut	қою
read	read	read	оқу
ride	rode	ridden	атпен салт жүру
ring	ra g	rung	шылдырлау
rise	rose	risen	көтерілу
run	ran	run	жүгіру
saw	sawed	sawn	арамен кесу
say	said	said	айту
see	saw	seen	көру
seek	sought	sought	іздеу
sell	sold	sold	сату
send	sent	sent	жіберу
set	set	set	енгізу, отыру (күн)
shake	shook	shake	с□лкілдету
shave	shaved	shaven	қырыну
shed	Shed	shed	төгу (қан, көз жасын)
shine	shone	shone	жарқырау
shoot	shot	shot	ату
show	showed	shown	көрсету
shrink	shrank	shrunk	тыржиту, қысқару
shut	shut	shut	жабу
sing	sang	sung	ән салу
sink	sank	su k	бату
sit	sat	sat	отыру
sleep	slept	slept	ұйықтау
slide	slid	slid	сырғу
smell	smelt smelled	smelt smelled	иіс шығу; иіскеу
sow	sowed	sown	егу

speak	spoke	spoken	айту
speed	sped	sped	асығу; тездету
spell	spelt spelled	spelt spelled	сөзді әріптеп жаз□, айту
spend	spent	spent	жіберу
spill	spilt spilled	spilt spilled	төгіп алу
spin	span	spun	иіру
spit	spat	spat	түкіру
split	split	split	жару
spoil	spoilt spoiled	spoilt spoiled	бүлдіру
spread	spread	spread	жаю
spring	sprang	sprung	секіру
stand	stood	stood	тұру
steal	stole	stole	ұрлау
stick	stuck	stuck	жапсыру
sting	stung	stung	шағу
strike	struck	struck	соғу; көтерілу
strive	strove	striven	тырысу
swear	swore	sworn	ант ету, ұрысу
sweep	swept	swept	сыпыру
swell	swelled	swollen	ісіну
swim	swam	swum	жүзу
swing	swung	swung	шайқау
take	took	taken	алу
teach	taught	taught	үйрету, оқыту
tear	tore	torn	жұлу
tell	told	told	әңгіме айту
think	thought	thought	ойлау
throw	threw	thrown	лақтыру
tread	trod	trodden	ж□ру, аяқ□басу
understand	understood	understood	түсіну
wake	woke waked	woken waked	ояту, ояну
wear	wore	worn	кию
weep	wept	wept	жылау
win	won	won	үту
wind	wound	wound	бұрау, өрлеу
write	wrote	written	жазу

Part 2. Exercises.

Жаттығулар.

Exercise 1.

Write down 5 proper and 5 common nouns.

Exercise 2.

Put these words in the plural forms:

Pencil, map, wall, window, door, shop, week, friend, girl, clock, pen, street, river, plate, fork, spoon, lamp, Rat, coat, town;

Dress, watch, glass, bus, match, mass, bench, fox, bush, branch, speech, dick, language, place, bridge, rose, case;

Party, army, country, colony, play, key, toy, day, way, family, dictionary, story, copy, laboratory, journey, library, university, faculty, ministry;

Leaf, life, thief, shelf, wife, half, loaf;

Man, woman, child, tooth, foot, goose, mouse.

Exercise 3.

Put these words in the singular forms:

Wolves, libraries, copies, shelves, ladies, ways, lives, washes, days, babies, universities, matches, files, ministries, halves, colonies, keys, knives, brushes, men, bodies, lorries, women, children.

Exercise 4.

Put into the Singular:

1. These are phonemes. 2. We have English and French books. 3. Roses are beautiful flowers. 4. Houses have roofs. 5. Those are little children. 6. Foxes are animals. 7. Watches are small clocks. 8. Classroom have blackboards. 9. These are old oaks. 10. Dogs have tails. 11. Those boys are good friends. 12. Balls are round.

Exercise 5.

Translate into English:

- 1) Бақшада көп балалар.
- 2) Бұл кімнің баласы?
- 3) Екі ер адам және үш әйел адам бақшада отырды .
- 4) Бұл екі шыны заводы үш жыл бұрын салынды.
- 5) Бұл шыны заводы біздің фабрикадан алыс емес.
- 6) Кітапханада қазір кісі өте көп.
- 7) Бұл кітап 8 пенс тұрады.
- 8) Пенс қоладан жасалады.
- 9) Ол бір пенс ақшаны үстелдің үстіне қойды?

Exercise 6.

Translate into English:

- 1) Сіздің ақшаңыз қайда?- Үстелдің үстінде.
- 2) Бұл кімнің ақшасы? - Ол Оляның ақшасы.
- 3) Күздігүні біз өте көп жеміс жейміз.
- 4) Жазда және күзде оңтүстікте өте көп жемістер бар.
- 5) Оның шашы ақшыл.
- 6) Оның шашы қара ма?
- 7) Сіздердің жазғы демалыстарың қашан басталады? – Бірінші шілдеден басталады.
- 8) Біздердің қысқы демалысымыз ақпанда бітеді.

Exercise 7.

Put the following nouns in the plural form (Remember the indefinite article is adopted before nouns in the plural form):

A table, a plate, a fox, a room, a lady, a knife, a chair, a bus, a Negro, a match, a way, a house, a family, a flag, a town, a wolf, a country, a lion, a park, a play.

Exercise 8.

Put the following nouns in the plural form (Pay attention that the indefinite article is adopted before nouns in the plural form, but the definite article is saved):

A star, a mountain, a tree, a shilling, a king, the waiter, the queen, a man, a woman, the woman, an eye, a shelf, a box, the city, a boy, a goose, the watch, a mouse, a dress, a toy, the sheep, a tooth, a child, the ox, a deer, the life, a tomato.

Exercise 9.

Put the following sentences in the plural form:

1. This is a star. 2. This is a boy. 3. This is a baby. 4. That is a plate. 5. That is a flower. 6. That is a plate. 5. That is a flower. 6. That is a bookshelf. 7. Is this a sofa? 8. Is this a bookcase? 9. Is this a man? 10. Is that a ball? 11. Is that a train? 12. Is that a plane? 13. Is the window open? 14. Is the door closed? 15. Is the boy near the window? 16. That is not a king. 17. That is not a queen. 18. That is not a bus. 19. This isn't a mountain. 20. That isn't a goose. 21. This isn't a mouse. 22. It is a sheep. 23. It is a cigarette. 24. It is a cat. 25. It is not a girl. 26. It isn't a bag. 27. It isn't a tree. 28. It is not a bad egg. 29. It is a good egg. 30. Is that a flower?

Exercise 10.

Put the following nouns in the plural form:

1. This room is very large. 2. There is a match in the box. 3. Has this lady a knife? 4. There is a man and a woman in the street. 5. This lady is that

gentleman's wife. 6. This shoe is too large for my foot. 7. The child is sitting on a bench. 8. My tooth is white. 9. This key is made of steel. 10. A potato is a vegetable and a cherry is a fruit. 11. This is my friend's study.

Exercise 11.

Put the following nouns in the plural form:

1. What is that child's name? 2. The cat has caught a mouse. 3. There was a lady, a gentleman, a boy and a girl in the room. 4. In the farm-yard we could see an ox, a sheep, a cow and a goose. 5. Is this worker an Englishman or a German? – He is a Frenchman. 6. Why don't you eat this potato? 7. This strawberry is still green. 8. The withered leaf has fallen to the ground. 9. Can you see a bird in that tree? 10. Does your tooth still ache? 11. I held up my foot to the fire to warm it. 12. His child studies very well. 13. This man works at our office. 14. There is a new house in our street. 15. This story is very interesting. 16. I have hurt my foot. 17. The wolf has been shot. 18. He keeps his toy in a box. 19. Put this knife on that table.

Exercise 12.

Put the following nouns in the plural form:

1. This is my stocking. 2. He has a new suit. 3. This metal is very hard. 4. That ship is a Russian one. 5. I heard her voice. 6. His dog does not like bread. 7. The plate was on the table. 8. This town is very large. 9. I was talking to her at the tram stop yesterday. 10. Is that girl your sister? 11. I shall give you my book. 12. This story will be a good one. 13. Is this a good match? 14. The boy put his book on the desk. 15. She took off her hat. 16. That house is new. 17. The young man put his hand in his pocket. 18. Is this student coming with us, too? 19. The woman didn't say anything. 20. Does she speak English?

Exercise 13.

Put the following nouns in the plural form:

1. This is a bird. 2. Is that also a bird? – No, it isn't. That is a cat. 3. Is that a good horse? – Yes, it is. 4. Is that a cow big or small? – It is big. 5. This is an apple and that is a flower. 6. Where is the coin? – It is in the box. 7. What colour is the box? – It is green. 8. What is it made of? – It is made of wood. 9. What is that man? – He is a clerk. 10. Is he in the office? – Yes, he is. 11. Is that woman a typist? – No, she isn't. – What is she? – She is a doctor. 12. Is his brother at home? – Yes, he is. 13. This house has a balcony looking out on the street. 14. The architecture of this building is quite modern. 15. This is a new district of St. Petersburg. 16. There is a shop, a cinema and a theatre in the new district. 17. He is a retired worker. 18. I am a doctor. 19. We hear the sounds of a child's voice. 20. She is a nice girl.

Exercise 14.

Put the nouns in the Possessive Case:

- 1) The voice of my brother.
- 2) The plays of Bernard Show.
- 3) The watch of my father.
- 4) The books of the boys.
- 5) The end of the book.
- 6) The parents of Peter.
- 7) The birthday of my daughter.
- 8) The signature of Mr. A.
- 9) The new club of the workers.
- 10) The boats of the fishermen.
- 11) The letter of my brother.
- 12) The wall of the garden.
- 13) The centre of the town.
- 14) The novels of Tolstoy.
- 15) The secretary of Mr. D.
- 16) The hats of the women.
- 17) The beginning of the meeting.
- 18) The teacher of my children.
- 19) The legs of the table.
- 20) The car of Peter.
- 21) The opinion of the director.

Exercise 15.

Replace the *of*-phrases by the noun in the Possessive Case:

1.The wife of Doctor Sanford. 2.The elder sister of Helen. 3.The friend of my brother-in-law. 4.The best suit of my husband. 5.The novels of Dickens. 6.The hat of my sister-in-law. 7.The answers of the students. 8.The tools of the workers. 9.The dress of the girl. 10.The dresses of the girls.

Exercise 16.

Replace the *of*- phrases by the noun in the Possessive Case:

1.The face of the woman is attractive. 2.The faces of these women are attractive. 3.The coat of my father-in-law is grey. 4.The coats of the passers-by are wet. 5.The voice of the man is too loud. 6.The voices of the men sound harsh. 7.The toys of the child are on the floor. 8.The toys of the children are on the floor.

Exercise 17.

Change the following nouns with the preposition “of” with the nouns in the possessive case.

Model: The name of his friend ... - His friend's name ...

1. The studio of the painter is large. 2. The house of my uncle is old. 3. The car of his friend is new. 4. The easel of the painter is high. 5. The hat of the model is white. 6. The room of their daughter is small. 7. The books of the students are on the shelf. 8. The name of her friend is John. 9. I like the drawings of our children. 10. Let me have a look at the new sketches of Ann. 11. Let us meet at the place of Mr. Green.

Exercise 18.

Write down in written form:

2, 12, 20, 28, 3, 13, 30, 35, 4, 14, 40, 49, 5, 15, 50, 56, 6, 16, 60, 67, 7, 17, 70, 8, 18, 80, 89, 9, 19, 90, 100, 107, 126, 200, 349, 607, 839, 1, 000, 5,007, 6,456, 8,967, 67, 237, 100,000,000.

Exercise 19.

Translate into English:

1) 200 кітап; 2) 5,000 студент; 3) 21 жәшік; 4) 141 кітап; 5) 2,000,000 кітап; 6) 3,000 ақша; 7) 41 күн; 8) 500 бала; 9) 31 ер бала; 10) 600 үй.

Exercise 20.

Write down on English the following dates:

15 ақпан 1959 жылы, 21 сәуір 1959 жылы, 3 мамыр 1960 жылы, 12 маусым 1960 жылы, 15 шілде 1961 жылы, 14 тамыз 1962 жылы, 17 қыркүйек 1962 жылы, 25 қараша 1962 жылы.

Exercise 21.

Fill in the blanks with the verb “to be” using in the suitable form in Present Indefinite.

1. He ... a good student. 2. They ... old friends. 3. I ... a teacher. 4. John ... absent from class today. 5. The weather ... good today. 6. The sky ... clear. 7. We ... both students. 8. Mr. Smith ... sick today. 9. She and I ... cousins.

Exercise 22.

Write the following sentences in the interrogative and negative forms.

1. They are in Europe now. 2. She is a clever girl. 3. It is cold today. 4. He is in his office. 5. They are members of the country club. 6. Both sisters are tall. 7. John is angry with you. 8. She is a good tennis player. 9. The stamps are in my desk. 10. She is a good teacher. 11. I am her cousin.

Exercise 23.

Fill in the blanks with the verb “to be” in Past Indefinite.

1. Ann ... absent from school yesterday. 2. The exercises in the last lesson ... difficult. 3. We ... tired after our long walk. 4. She ... in the same class as Nick last year. 5. The weather yesterday ... very warm. 6. There ... a lot of

students absent from class yesterday. 7. I ... hungry after so many exercises. 8. I ... busy all day yesterday. 9. We ... good friends for many years.

Exercise 24.

Write the following sentences in the interrogative and negative forms.

1. We were pleased to receive your letter. 2. The door of the office was open. 3. The wind last night was very strong. 4. He and his brother were sick two days ago. 5. There were few passengers in the compartment. 6. There was a very interesting lecture last Monday. 7. There were two examinations last spring. 8. There was a large picture in her room.

Exercise 25.

Fill in the blanks with the verb “to be” in Future Indefinite.

1. She ... our new teacher. 2. These exercises ... very difficult for you. 3. They ... glad to see their old friends. 4. There ... many examinations next term. 5. There ... a new club in our town next year. 6. We ... very tired after the long walk. 7. I ... happy to be here again. 8. We ... interested in his progress.

Exercise 26.

Fill in the blanks with the verb “to be” in Present, Past or Future Indefinite.

1. My father ... a teacher. 2. He ... a pupil twenty years ago. 3. I ... a doctor when I grow up. 4. My sister ... not ... at home tomorrow. 5. She ... at school tomorrow. 6. ... you ... at home tomorrow? 7. ... your father at work yesterday? 8. My sister ... ill last week. 9. She ... not ill now. 10. Yesterday we ... at the theatre. 11. Where ... your mother now? – She ... in the kitchen. 12. Where ... you yesterday? – I ... at the cinema. 13. When I come home tomorrow, all my family ... at home. 14. ... your little sister in bed now? – Yes, she 15. ... you ... at school tomorrow? – Yes, I 16. When my granny ... young, she ... an actress. 17. My friend ... in Moscow now. 18. He ... in St.Petersburg tomorrow. 19. Where ... your books now? – They ... in my bag.

Exercise 27.

Translate into English using the verb to be in Present, Past and Future Indefinite.

1. Менің ағам қазір мектепте. 2. Менің ағам кеше кинода болды. 3. Менің ағам ертең үйде болады. 4. Сен ертең үйде боласың ба? 5. Ол кеше паркте болды ма? 6. Ол қазір аулада ма? 7. Әкең қайда? 8. Сіз кеше қайда болдыңыз? 9. Ол ертең қайда болады? 10. Менің кітаптарым үстелдің үстінде болды. Олар қазір қайда? 11. Менің апам кеше жұмыста болған жоқ. Ол үйде болды. 12. Менің досым паркте емес. Ол мектепте. 13. Ертең сағат үште Қанат пен Марат аулада болады. 14. Біз өткен жазда оңтүстікте болған жоқпыз. Біз Мәскеуде болдық. 15. Ертең менің атам ауылда болады.

16. Сенің апаң үйде қашан болады? 17. Сен ұшқыш боласың ба? – Жоқ, мен теңізші боламын. 18. Менің апам өткен жылы студент болды, ал қазір ол дәрігер. – Сен де дәрігер боласың ба? - Жоқ, мен дәрігер болмаймын. Мен инженер боламын.

Exercise 28.

Insert articles where nursery:

This is ...classroom. There are ten students in ... classroom. One student is standing. The others are sitting. There is one door and four windows in ... classroom. There is ... table in ... classroom. There are ... flowers on ... table. There are two pictures on ... walls. One picture is near ... door; the other is near one of ... windows. ... blackboard is in ... middle of one of ... walls. There is ... large map to ... right of ... blackboard. It is ... map of ... world. There are different countries on it, they are all of ... different colors: green and brown, light brown and dark grey, yellow and red. I can find ... place on... map, where ... father is now: it is ... Far East. It is far from Leningrad. When it is still dark in Leningrad and only ... moon and stars are shining it is light there because ... sun is already rising in ... East.

Exercise 29.

Fill in the definite or indefinite article if necessary:

1. There are three rooms and ... kitchen in her new flat. 2. My new dress is made of ... silk. 3. If you want to write something on ... blackboard, you must have ... piece of ... chalk. 4. Are there any students in ... Room No. 12? 5. I have ... new English book. ... book is very interesting. 6. There is ... garden and ... lawn in front of her Institute. ... garden is not large, but it is very beautiful. 7. The students of your group must be in ... Room №30. 8. Open ... book at page 29 and start reading. 9. May is ... fifth month of the year. 10. Saturday is ... day off.

Exercise 30.

Use the proper article:

1. Come to ... blackboard and write ... Exercise 12. 2. You have ... spelling mistake in ... word “nursery”. 3. He is ... old friend of mine. 4. He is young artist and, I should say, rather talented. 5. He gave her ... cigarette and lighted it. 6. I don’t feel ... sympathy towards this man. 7. They are going to build ... new house. 8. Are ... rooms in your flat large or small? 9. ... hour is a long time. In ... hour you can read ... newspaper, or write ... letter. 10. What ... beautiful music he is playing! 11. In every remark he found ... meaning but not always the true meaning. 12. There is ... curiosity in her look. 13. ... Sand fords have ... nice house ... house isn’t large but comfortable.

Exercise 31.

Fill in articles wherever necessary:

1. Mary has taken cold shower and is going to dress. 2. Let me have look at your translation. 3. I always do room with vacuum-cleaner. 4. Let's turn on cassette-recorder and dance to music. 5. What are your fellow-students doing? – Mary is playing piano. Peter and David are playing chess. 6. I don't go to Institute by bus. I prefer to go there by Metro. 7. How long does it take you to do ... home work? 8. Something has gone wrong with vacuum-cleaner. I am sure it's ... plug. 9. It is not pleasant to go by Metro on such fine day. Let's go on foot. 10. Will you turn on radio? I should like to listen to seven o'clock news. 11. It's pity you have never been to England. 12. My parents are still in town.

Exercise32.

Put the personal pronouns in brackets in the objective case.

1. My friend sends (I) many letters. 2. Her husband knows (you) well. 3. I sometimes go to see (they). 4. We usually meet (she) in the evening. 5. Do you like this kind of painting? – Yes, I like (it) very much. 6. Please, help (I) with my English. 7. You study together with (he), don't you? 8. Come to see (we) some day.

Exercise 33.

Put the possessive pronouns:

1. I see that she has lost ... pencil; perhaps you can give her ...? 2. Tell him not to forget ... ticket; she mustn't forget ... either. 3. Show me ... dictation; I shall show you ... too. 4. We have left ... dictionaries at home; I hope they will lend us 5. I have left ... fountain-pen at home. Can he lend me 6. We see they have no dictionaries; we can lend them 7. Show me ... new watch. 8. They have a garden, but ... garden is very small.

Exercise 34.

Translate into English:

1. Ол кеше өзінің сағатын жоғалтып алды. 2. Өзіңіздің қаламыңызды маған көрсетіңізші. 3. Мен кеше оған өзімнің кітабымды бердім. 4. Олар маған өздерінің аудиториясын көрсетті. 5. Ол кеше өзінің әкесіне телеграмма жіберді. 6. Олар өздерінің сөздіктерін алып келді, біз өзіміздікін алып келдік.

Exercise 35.

Fill in the blanks with the possessive pronouns matching to the personal pronouns given in brackets.

1. (I) ... family is in Moscow. 2. (He) ... son is 12 years old. 3. (She) ... name is Mary. 4. (They) ... children are at school now. 5. (We) ... teacher is a specialist in art. 6. (You) ... brother is a stamp-collector, isn't he?

Exercise 36.

Fill in the blanks with the possessive pronouns paying attention to the form of the subject.

1. They have ... classes every day. 2. He is in ... study (кабинет) now. 3. She goes to see ... friends very often. 4. We are in ... classroom most of the time. 5. You are at ... best today. 6. I am in ... studio now.

Exercise 37.

Give the words in the possessive case using 's, s' or '

1. Ross, address 2. (a) week, holiday 3. my relatives, house 4. A.Christie, novels 5. Alex, novels 6. Alex, discs 7. my sister room 8. her neighbour, car 9. (a) woman, magazine 10. Lames, secretary 11. (a) child, bicycle 12. (a) girls, school 13. (a) week, trip 14. (an) actress, career 15. Doris, dress 16. teenagers, music

Exercise 38.

Change the phrases with the preposition of with the nouns in the possessive case.

1. the name of my friend 2. the speech of the leader 3. the flat of Liz 4. the visit of Max 5. a novel by Sheldon 6. the life of a student 7. the boyfriend of Bess 8. the rights of people 9. the books of her sons 10. the toys of my baby 11. the hobbies of my parents 12. a show of actors 13. a poem by Keats 14. the rays of the sun 15. the climate of England 16. the news of today 17. the progress of the world 18. the surface of the earth 19. a break of ten minutes 20. the history of Russia

Exercise 39

Fill in the blanks with the possessive pronouns.

1. Autumn has come. I like ... beauty. 2. I wash ... hair every week. 3. Nelly saw Peter with ... wife. 4. He has a bad memory. He can't remember even ... own name. 5. This book is very old. ... pages are yellow. 6. I've got a relative in England. ... aunt lives in Guilford. 7. Some women are not happy with ... looks. 8. Charles is going to a picnic with ... girl-friend. 9. Are you satisfied with ... marks, Mark? 10. Sally and I like Maths. It's ... favourite subject. 11. Can I take ... raincoat, Ann? 12. – Is this ... tape-recorder? – No, they don't have a tape-recorder. 13. Can you rely on Parents? 14. There is a mouse under the table. I can see ... tail. 15. My parents often play cards with ... neighbours.

Exercise 40.

Insert *this, that, these, those*.

1. ... man is a well-known painter. 2. As you see ... canvases are unfinished. 3. I know ... students. They study Art too. 4. Do you like ... picture? – not quite. I like ... sketches better. 5. Have you got ... photo? 6. ... studio is full of light and cosy. 7. ... paints are in the box. 8. ... portrait is made in oil. 9. ... are my new pencil sketches. 10. I haven't got ... album.

Exercise 41.

Insert demonstrative pronoun:

1. ... article is easy and ... one is difficult. 2. Pass me ... magazines. Thank you. 3. ... boy is fond of music and his dream is to become pianist. 4. Who is ... little girl at the window. 5. ... book are mine and ... yours. 6. Are ... men over there your friends? 7. ... flowers are beautiful, aren't they? 8. Leave ... two dictionaries on my table and take ... books on the table over there to the library. 9. ... picture is framed and ... one is not. 10. ... roof is red and ... one is green.

Exercise 42.

Translate into English.

1. Мен қолымды кесіп алып өзімді аяп тұрмын. 2. Оның бастығы жоқ. Ол өзіне-өзі жұмыс істейді. 3. Сіз кейде өзіңізбен өзіңіз сөйлесесіз бе? Кейбір адамдар өзімен өзі сөйлеседі. 4. Біз өзімізге өзіміз сенуіміз керек. 5. Әр ойынның алдында Андрей өзіне өзі жеңіс тілейді. 6. Осының шындық екеніне сену үшін өзімді шымшып алуыма тура келді. 7. Науқас әлі өзін-өзі күте алмайды. 8. Оларды аямаңыз, олар өз мәселелерін өздері шешеді. 9. Өзіңізді таныстырмайсыз ба, жігітім? 10. Бұл оқиға үшін ол өзін-өзі кінәламау керек. Ол қолынан келгенінің бәрін істеді. 11. Сақ бол, өзінді жарақаттап алма. 12. Сен мақтана алмайсың. Сенікі дұрыс емес екендігін сен өзіңе өзің айтуың керек. 13. Емтихан алдында өзіңе өзің жетістік тіле.

Exercise 43.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: This is a postcard. ↔ These are postcards.

Those are our friends. ↔ That is our friend.

1. This is a newspaper. 2. that is my sister. 3. Is this your dictionary? 4. That is not his bag. 5. Those people are clerks. 6. Give me that spoon. 7. Are these pencils red? 8. This car is mine and that is his. 9. I lived in these rooms for many years. 10. Can you see that bird? 11. This house is empty. 12. Who bought that magazine? 13. This mistake is very bad. 14. Is that a dog or a wolf? 15. Spell this word, please. 16. These letters are for me.

Exercise 44.

Choose the right word.

1. Listen to (this, that). It's a new hit. You'll enjoy it. 2. Who's (this, that) over there? 3. – Do you know French? – I learned it, but (this, that) was ages ago. 4. We'll never forget (this, that) morning when it happened. 5. – How do you like (these, those) trousers? – They really suit you. 6. Do you remember (these, those) days when we so happy? 7. Who were (these, those) people who came to see you last night? 8. – How is your lunch? – OK, but I don't like (these, those) potatoes very much. 9. – (This, that) is a nice flat. – I'm glad you like it. 10. I can't remember – have you been here before? – No, (this, that) is the first time. 11. (This, that) way sir. 12. Take (these, those) kids out of here. 13. Let's meet one of (these, those) days. 14. – Did you see him? – No. – (This, that) is a pity. 15. Now I'd like to thank (these, those) people who came to help us.

Exercise 45.

Make up sentences using the following phrases.

1. believe in yourself 2. blame yourself 3. cut yourself 4. enjoy yourself 5. feel sorry for yourself 6. help yourself 7. hurt yourself 8. introduce yourself 9. pinch yourself 10. be proud of yourself 11. take care of yourself 12. talk to yourself 13. teach yourself 14. tell yourself 15. work for yourself 16. wish yourself (luck)

Exercise 46.

Replace underlined words by the personal pronouns.

1. The man showed pictures to the boy. This book is for children. 3. My mother saw Mary yesterday. 4. My friend went to the theatre with his wife. 5. My brother bought a hat yesterday. 6. Peter spoke to my father about this book. 7. The children are looking at the picture. 8. The girl is sitting with her mother near the river.

Exercise 47.

Fill in suitable reflexive pronouns.

1. Don't shave in the dark, Peter, you will cut 2. He doesn't like to speak about ... 3. She will keep this book for 4. He burned 5. She told us very little about 6. I bought these magazines for 7. Did you buy, my dear friends, this television set for ... ? 8. People protect ... from the rain with an umbrella.

Exercise 48.

Fill in suitable reflexive pronouns.

1. They can do it 2. He'll answer the letter 3. We'll speak to him 4. The children did it 5. She'll bring it to you 6. I didn't know about it 7. Children, go there 8. Helen, speak to him 9. I think we can do it 10. Will you sign this letter ...? 11. Peter wrote and posted the letter

Exercise 49.

Fill in one of the following pronouns: who, whom, whose, what, which.

1. ... knows Comrade A's address? 2. ... of you knows Comrade A's address? 3. ... would you like to drink? 4. ... would you like to drink: mineral water or lemonade? 5. ... of these apples may I take? 6. On ... side of the street is your house? 7. ... language do you know better German or English? 8. Here are the fountain-pens. ... is yours? 9. ... flowers grow in your garden? 10. ... of you can help me? 11. ... can help me? 12. ... fountain-pen is this? – It is mine. 13. ... is she? – She is a doctor. 14. ... is this man? – He is Ivanov. 15. ... house is that? – It is Peter's house. 16. ... of you is the youngest? 17. ... dictionary is this, yours or mine? 18. ... did you see there? 19. ... did you ask to dinner? 20. ... is his opinion on this matter? 23. ... did you give the letter to? 24. ... is your telephone number? 25. ... cake is yours? 26. ... teaches you English.

Exercise 50.

Insert some, any or no.

1. Are there ... letters for me? No, there aren't ... letters for you. There are ... letters in the letter box. 2. You have ... very nice water – colors here. 3. I have got ... interesting books to read. 4. There aren't ... magazines here. 5. There are ... coat – hangers in the wardrobe. 6. I have got ... interesting news to tell you. 7. There isn't ... butter on the table ... take ... fresh butter from the bridge. 8. Will you have a cup of tea? There is ... hot water in the kettle. 9. I have got ... time to speak to you now. I am very busy. 10. Have you got ... English records at home? 11. You may read ... book you like. 12. Where can I buy ... flowers? 13. I am interested in ... information you can give me on this question. 14. May I have ... water, please? 15. Give me money if you have 16. If you have ... idea about it, please tell it to me. 17. If you see ... nice prints, buy them, please.

Exercise 51.

Insert somebody, someone, anybody, something, anything, everything, nothing, anyone, everybody, nobody, no one, none.

Give two variants if possible:

1. I see at the window. 2. Is there new? 3. There is in the next room who wants to speak to you. 4. knows about it. 5. Will you give me to eat, I am hungry. 6. If calls while I am out, ask him to wait. 7. If there is else you want, please let me know. 8. I haven't any more money about me, so I cannot buy else. 9. Where can I get to eat? 10. When can I find here who can give me some information on this question? 11. Let me know if happens. 12. I know about your town. Tell me know if it. 13. I can see it is to a dark here. 14. I understand now thank you for your explanation. 15. of them speak English well.

Exercise 52.

Fill in somebody (someone), anybody (anyone), nobody (no one), everybody (everyone), something, nothing, everything:

1. The door is open. There must be ... at home. 2. There is ... wrong with my fountain-pen. It won't write. 3. A blind man cannot see 4. Is there ... in the room? - Yes, there is ... in it. 5. It is too dark here, I cannot see 6. If there is ... in the room you may turn off the light. 7. Can ... recite the poem? 8. We must do ... to help her. 9. Can I do ... for you? 10. There must be ... interesting in the book you read. 11. It is too dark, I can't see ... on the blackboard. May I turn on the light? 12. We can work in Room No. 20. There is ... there. 13. Let's go there at once. I want to see ... with my own eyes. 14. May I come to see you tonight? I've got ... to tell you. 15. Bob is one of our best students, ... knows him. 16. Must we learn ... by heart? - No, must only prepare the poem for test reading. 17. There is ... interesting in this magazine. 18. Is ... away from the lesson?

Exercise 53.

Fill in *some, no, (not), any, (not), much, little, a little, (not), many, few, a few, a lot of*:

1. I have ... work today. 2. I should like to have ... milk for breakfast. 3. Mary has friends at the Institute. 4. There are ... boys in Group Two. 5. Can you give me ... English books? 6. Are there ... fruit trees in your orchard? 7. I have ... spare time today. 8. Who can give the boy ... pencils? 9. I must ask you ... questions about your studies. 10. Have I ... mistakes in spelling? 11. Are ... students away from the lesson? 12. I hope, I have ... mistakes in my translation.

Exercise 54.

Fill in the blanks with *some, any, not any, much, many, not much, not many, very little, a little, very few, a few*:

1. Are there ... college-graduates among your friends? - Yes, there are ... 2. Are there ... students in the next classroom? - No, there aren't ... 3. I haven't got time, I must hurry. 4. I have ... time and can help you. 5. There are ... cups on the table, but there aren't glasses. 6. I have very ... time and can't stay any longer. 7. We know very ... about it. 8. I have ... questions to ask. 9. Very ... people know Doctor Sanford. 10. There are ... girls in the family, are there? 11. There's very ... chalk at the blackboard, go and fetch ... 12. There are ... students in the hall, are there? 13. There isn't ... tea in the tea -pot. 14. There isn't ... paper in the box, I need more. 15. There aren't ... pencils in the box, don't take ... 16. It's a secret. Very ... people know about it. 17. Please add ... more tea in my cup.

Exercise 55.

Insert *a few, a little*.

1. I have got pictures in the room, but not many. 2. There is bread in the cupboard. Take it. 3. There are only cigarettes in the box. 4. books are lying on the table, but there are no magazines there. 5. I have money in my

pocket. 6. Give me water, please, I am very thirsty. 7. I have just prints, but they all are very good.

Exercise 56.

Insert one, ones or that, those in their appropriate forms:

1. You have got a lot of English books, have you got any French?
2. This sheet of paper is dirty; please give me a clean 3. Will you take my watch and Of my brother to the watchmaker? 4. Are there any new magazines? I don't want to read the old.... 5. Don't take the knife out of the drawer, take From the kitchen table. 6. I want to buy a new bookcase. What do you think of that? 7. I like Simonov's books and by Nagibin. 8. Does your brother want to live in this room or in that? 9. There are two tables in the dining-room. A big In the centre and small In the left-hand corner.

Exercise 57.

Insert some, any or no.

1. There are ... schools in this street. 2. Are there ... pictures in your book? 3. There are ... flowers here in winter. 4. I can see ... children in the yard. They are playing. 5. Are there ... new buildings in your street? 6. There are ... people in the park because it is cold. 7. I saw ... boys in the garden, but Mike was not among them. 8. They brought ... good books from the library. 9. Give me ... tea, please, I am thirsty. 10. Dinner is not yet ready, so she gave the children ... bread and butter because they were hungry. 11. Do you want ... milk in your coffee? 12. have you got ... time to spare? 14. There is ... ham on the plate. 15. There is ... tea in the cup: the cup is empty.

Exercise 58.

Insert something, anything, nothing or everything.

1. ... is all right, the patient is much better today. 2. Is there ... interesting in the programme of the concert? 3. I could see ... : it was quite dark. 4. Give me ... to drink. 5. I didn't take any money with me, so I couldn't buy 6. My new eyeglasses are very good, I can see ... now. 7. I saw ... near the wood that looked like a tent.

Exercise 59.

Insert somebody, anybody, nobody or everybody.

1. Has ... in this group got a dictionary? 2. ... left a magazine in our classroom yesterday. 3. The question was so difficult that ... could answer it. 4. I am afraid I shan't be find ... in the office now: it is too late. 5. ... knows that water is necessary for life. 6. Is there ... here who knows French? 7. You must find ... who can help you. 8. ... knew anything about America before Columbus discovered it. 9. I saw ... in the train yesterday who looked like you. 10. There is ... in the next room. I don't know him. 11. Please tell us the story. ... knows it. 12. Is there ... in my group who lives in the dormitory? 13. Has ... there got a red pencil? 14. ... can answer this question. It is very easy.

Exercise 60.

Insert *some, any, no* or their product-words.

1. Here are ... books by English writers. Take ... book you like. 2. There are ... boys in the garden because they are at school. 3. I can see ... on the snow, but I don't know what it is. 4. Are there ... desks in the classroom? – Yes, there are many. 5. There are ... books on this desk, but there are ... exercises –books. 6. Did he say ...about it? –No. he said 7. What shall I do now, Mom? I have done my homework. – You can do ... you like.8. There was ... in the street because it was very late. 9. ... wants to see him. 10. Is there ... here who knows this man? 11. Have you ... books on Dickens? I want to read ... about him. I have read ... books by Dickens and I am interested in the life of the writer. 12. Can ... tell me how to get to the Public Library?-Yes, take ... bus that goes from here towards the railway station and get off at the third stop. 13. Please bring me ... apples, Mary. 14. That is a very easy question - ...can answer it.

Exercise 61.

Fill in the blanks with the words *somebody, something, anybody, anything, nobody, nothing*.

1. There is ... wrong with the printer. It won't work. 2. ... opened the window again! 3. Have you heard ... about the new Hollywood blockbusters? 4. ... can stop him when he is in love. 5. The neighbours didn't see ... coming into Liz's flat. 6. He proposed to her. She answered He got upset. 7. We have ... interesting for you. There is no news today. 8. – Hello! Is ... at home? – I'm afraid there is ... in. 9. ... has happened since we got married. Our life is so boring. 10. – Did he say ...? – Yes, he said ... about the weather. 11. It's cold in here. Would you like ... hot? 12. – Did you discuss ...? – There was ... to discuss. 13. – Did he play cards last night? – He had ... to play with. 14. I am going to the laundry. Do you have ... to wash? 15. Does ... know where my glasses are? I can't see ... without them.

Exercise 62.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. What can one do in such a case? 2. One can't understand why he did it. 3. When one doesn't know grammar, one often makes mistakes. 4. One must do one's duty. 3. One should never put off till tomorrow what one often makes mistakes. 4. One must do one's duty. 5. One should never put off tomorrow what one can do today. 6. Now one can speak by telephone over any distance. 7. One should answer letters immediately. 8. One sees other people's faults sooner than one's own. 9. In such circumstances one sometimes doesn't know what one should do. 10. One thing is clear to all oppressed peoples: one must fight for one's independence. 11. One is always pleased to meet a person with whom one has spent one's childhood. 12. In direct speech one gives the exact words of the speaker, in indirect speech one reports in one's own words what somebody has

said. 13. One must always observe the traffic regulations. 14. One can never know what that child can do. 15. One can find these figures in any handbook on this question. 16. One should take into consideration that this question is very difficult.

Exercise 63.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. There were two trains that evening. The hoped to catch the earlier one. 2. He looked for a map of Europe, but couldn't find one. At last he found one in a geography book. 3. I don't like this hat. Can you show me a better one? 4. These nails are too small. I need larger ones, and not small ones. 5. Have you got a ship for the transportation of these goods? – No, we must charter one. 6. I haven't got a television-set. I want to buy one. 7. There is no glass here. Bring one, please. 8. Where can I get a box of matches? – There is one on my table. 9. This is a small vase. We need a large one. 10. My brother has got a good radio-set and I have a bad one. 11. Do you want an orange? There is one on the table. 12. His room is good, but the one you live in is much better. 13. I liked this story very much, but I disliked the one you told us yesterday. 14. These apples are very bad. 15. This house is more beautiful than the one Peter has built. 16. If you don't like this apple, take another one.

Exercise 64.

Put the verbs into the Past Indefinite Tense:

We ... into a very small but comfortable room (to come). There much furniture in it: a bed, a small round table, a wardrobe and two chairs (not to be). The wash – stand and the shower in the garden. (to be). I usually at six o'clock in the morning, ..., ... the bed and in some twenty minutes I on my way to the sea. (to get up, to wash, to make, to be) It me about ten minutes to go to sea-shore (to take). I my morning exercises and (to do, to bathe). Then I down on the sand and to the sun till 11 o'clock (to lie, to bask) At 11 sharp I My basket and to the nearest canteen to have breakfast (to take, to go) My breakfast not very substantial, for I can't eat much after I've lain in the sun for several hours (to be). On the beach I often some of my friends, who sometimes a transistor radio set with them (to meet, to bring). It is very pleasant to listen in while you are lying in the sun. After dinner, which I rather late, I for a stroll along the sea – coast or to the tennis court to have a few sets of tennis (to have, to go). When it quite dark, I I to lathe for a second time together with my friends. (to be, to go). I to bed at 11 o'clock. (to go)

Exercise 65.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. He gets newspapers in the morning. 2. He bought a television – set yesterday. 3. I always bought newspaper on my way to the factory. 4. He came home late yesterday. 5. Last year he came home later than now. 6. He will do it at once. 7. He will do it several times. 8. Yesterday he called on us on his way

home. 9. He often called on us on his way home. 10. He will get up late tomorrow. 11. He will get up early in the summer.

Exercise 66.

Use the verbs in brackets in the suitable tense-form.

1. I (to write) an English exercise now. 2. I (to write) an English exercise at this time yesterday. 3. My little sister (to sleep) now. 4. My little sister (to sleep) at this time yesterday. 5. My friends (not to do) their homework now. They (to play) volley-ball. 6. My friends (not to do) their homework at seven o'clock yesterday. They (to play) volley-ball. 7. You (to eat) ice-cream now? 8. You (to eat) ice-cream when I rang you up yesterday? 9. What your father (to do) now? 10. What your father (to do) from eight till nine yesterday? 11. Why she (to cry) now? 12. Why she (to cry) when I saw her yesterday. 14. She (not to read) now. 15. Now she (to go) to school. 16. What you (to do) now? - I (to drink) tea. 17. You (to drink) tea at this time yesterday. - No? I (not to drink) tea at this time yesterday, I (to eat) a banana. 18. My sister is fond of reading. She (to read) the whole evening yesterday, and now she (to read) again. 19. Look! My cat (to play) with a ball. 20. When I went out into the garden, the sun (to shine) and birds (to sing) in the trees.

Exercise 67.

Use the verbs in brackets in the suitable tense-form.

1. I (to play) computer games yesterday. 2. I (to play) computer games at five o'clock yesterday. 3. He (to play) computer games from two till three yesterday. 4. We (to play) computer games the whole evening yesterday. 5. What Nick (to do) when you came to his place? 6. What you (to do) when I rang you up? 7. I (not to sleep) at nine o'clock yesterday? - He (to read) a book. 10. She (to sleep) when you came home? 11. My brother (not to play) tennis yesterday. He (to play) tennis the day before yesterday. 12. My sister (not to play) the piano at four o'clock yesterday. She (to play) the piano the whole evening. 13. When I came into the kitchen, mother (to cook). 14. She (to cook) the whole day yesterday. 15. We (to wash) the floor in our flat yesterday. 16. We (to wash) the floor in our flat from three till four yesterday. 17. You (to do) your homework yesterday? 18. You (to do) your homework from eight till ten yesterday? 19. Why she (to sleep) at seven o'clock yesterday? 20. He (to sit) at the table the whole evening yesterday.

Exercise 68.

Use the verbs in brackets in the suitable tense-form.

1. Look at these children: they (to skate) very well. 2. You (to skate) last Sunday? - Yes, we (to skate) the whole day last Sunday. We (to skate) again next Sunday. 3. My brother can skate very well. He (to skate) every Sunday. 4. What you (to do) now? - I (to wash) the dishes. 5. What you (to do) at three

o'clock yesterday? – I (to have) dinner. 6. You (to have) dinner now? 7. Where your brother (to work)? – He (to work) at an institute. 8. Your grandmother (to sleep) when you (to come) home yesterday? 9. What your brother (to do) tomorrow? 10. I (not to go) to the shop yesterday. I (to go) to the shop tomorrow. 11. Where Kate (to go) when you (to meet) her yesterday? 12. Every day the boss (to enter) the office at nine o'clock. 13. Yesterday the boss (to enter) the office at half past nine. 14. When the secretary (to come) tomorrow? 15. At six o'clock yesterday we (to listen) to a very interesting lecture. 16. When I (to enter) the office, the secretary (to type) some letters. 17. My friend (to ring) me up at eight o'clock yesterday.

Exercise 69.

Put the following sentences in the interrogative and negative forms. Translate into Kazakh.

1. I am eating breakfast. 2. We are drinking water. 3. He is bringing them some meat and vegetables. 4. You are putting the dishes on the table. 5. They are having tea. 6. She is taking dirty plates from the table. 7. The children are putting on their coats. 8. The pupils are writing a dictation. 9. My friend is helping me to solve a difficult problem. 10. I am learning a poem. 11. She is telling them an interesting story. 12. Kate is sweeping the floor. 13. The waiter is putting a bottle of lemonade in front of him. 14. Susan is making a new dress for her birthday party. 15. She is opening a box of chocolates.

Exercise 70.

Put the verb in brackets into the Past Indefinite. Comment on the use of the past Indefinite.

1. I (be) in Leningrad tomorrow morning. 2. Mother (be) away very soon. 3. He (be) home by nine o'clock. 4. I (know) the result in a day. 5. I (be) twenty years old next year. 6. He (remember) this day all his life. 7. When he (come) back? 8. Tomorrow I (apologize) to him. 9. I (not see) him again for a long time. 10. I am sure that I (recognize) him.

Exercise 71.

Put the verb in brackets into the Past Indefinite and Future Indefinite.

I. a. 1. If he (come) I (give) him this message. 2. I (be) at home if you (need) anything. 3. She (be) still here tomorrow if you (decide) to ring her up. 4. If they (want) your advice, they (get) in touch with you. 5. If you (have) anything to report, put it in writing and send it to me.

b. 1. I (tell) you about it when I (have) time. 2. He (wait) until they (send) for him. 3. They (be) better after this (be) over. 4. She (help) you with your homework as soon as she (do) her own. 5. I'd like to ask you a few more questions before you (go).

c. 1. They (not know) when she (come) back. 2. Ask him if he (be) here for the next five minutes. 3. I (wonder) if we ever (see) each other again. 4. I (be) not sure if they (be) in time. 5. I can't tell you when they (start).

II.1. When I (want) your address, I (ask) for it. 2. They (be) quite prepared to stay up until she (come) in. 3. "Come in," she said. "I (see) if he (be) at home". 4. "Life is a difficult business," said Father. "You (know) that when you (come) to my age." 5. Come and see me when you (come) up to town and we (talk) everything over. 6. In spite of the time difference I just might still catch him before he (leave) the office. 7. As soon as you (take) your son home, come over to my mother's. 8. If my daughter and her husband (come) in, kindly tell them to meet at John's at one o'clock. 9. He (want) to know if you (be) free tomorrow morning at eleven thirty. 10. I (wonder) when I (be) able to get there. 11. I (be) down at your office at ten tomorrow. 12. I (not want) to discuss it over the telephone, but I (tell) you about it when I (get) home. 13. They can't tell me when they (be) free. 14. Go on till you (come) to a square with a statue in the middle: then turn left and you (find) the theatre on your right. 15. When you (come) to the main road remember to stop and look both ways before you (cross). 16. Ask them when (move) to a new flat. 17. "Can we get to the top of the tower?" "Yes, but be careful when you (go) up because the steps (be) very uneven". 18. "I (be) glad when I (get) to the top!" "When you (see) the view you (be) glad you made the effort". 19. I wonder when they (come) back. 20. "Give this message to your teacher as soon as you (come) to school" said his mother. "All right", said the boy running out. "I (be) sure it (be) still in his pocket when he (get) home tonight", said his father. 21. If you (go) to your aunt's on Sunday I (hope) you (have) a good time there. 22. "I can't make out this letter". "I (call) my son. He (read) it for you". 23. "We (buy) you some soldiers." "When you (buy) them, Mummy?" "Daddy (bring) them. Perhaps he (bring) them tomorrow". 24. If you (look) at them, don't smile. 25. Before we (talk) about it, may I offer congratulations on your birthday?

Exercise 72.

Put the verb in brackets into the Past Indefinite. Comment on the use of the past Indefinite.

1. I (be) the captain of the girl's tennis team last year. 2. They (be) there less than nine months ago. 3. He (come) to see me the day before yesterday. 4. Three days later I (leave) Moscow. 5. We (not see) him again that night. 6. He (turn) around when I (come). 7. "Where you (see) him?"

"At the concert". 8. "How long you (work) there?" "About three years," she (say). 9. "You (go) to see her yesterday yourself?" "Yes, I ...". 10. Eliza, you (not scream) a while ago, may be a minute ago? 11. He (sit) down at his desk and (stare) out of the window. After a few moments he (get) up and (go) to the library. 12. He (shut) the window, (draw) the curtains over it, (switch) off the light and (go) upstairs.

Exercise 73.

Put the verbs in brackets into Present Indefinite or Present Continuous:

1. Look up! The sun so brightly. (to shine). 2. My uncle usually.... newspapers in the evening. (to read). 3. As a rule, my sister all housework in the evening. (to do). 4. Go and see! our children soundly. (to sleep). 5. Our family usually out of town on Sundays. (to go). What the students at the moment? (to do). Some of the students themselves. While the others the dialogue by heart. (to record, to learn) 6. ... your nephew English books in the original? (to read) 7. Hallo! Where you ? (go) – I to the university (to go). you there, too? (to go) – No, I not usually to the University in the morning. (to go) I evening classes (to attend). 9. you the words of this English song? (to understand) – Yes, I that now I them (to think, to understand). 10. Whom you there? (to see)

Exercise 74.

Use the Present Continuous instead of the infinitives in brackets:

1. He (not to work), he (to watch) the TV programmer. 2. Kitty (to finish) her porridge. 3. Look, the sun (to rise). 4. John (to polish) his boots and his sister (to press) her dress. 5. It (to rain)? Yes, it (to rain) very hard. 6. The delegation (to leave) Moscow tomorrow. 7. Somebody (to talk) in the next room. 8. Who (to make) such a noise? 9. What you (to read) now? I (to read) stories by Maugham. 10. The weather is fine. The sun (to shine) and the birds (to sing). 11. Somebody (to knock) at the door. 12. You (to go) anywhere tonight? 13. Why you (to speak) so fast? You (to make) a lot of mistakes. 14. Go and see what the children (to do). 15. Who you (to wait) for my sister. 16. I can't hear what they (to talk) about.

Exercise 75.

Use the Present Indefinite or the Present Continuous instead of the infinitives in brackets:

1. My elder sister (to have) a music lesson. She always (to have) a music lesson on Friday. 2. Who (to sing) in the next room? 3. Father (to read) a newspaper. He usually (to read) something before going to bed. 4. Mother (to cook) breakfast in the kitchen. She always (to cook) in the mornings. 5. Who you (to wait) for? – I (to wait) for Ann, we must leave in ten minutes. 6. It often (to rain) in autumn. 7. Do not go out, it (to rain) heavily. 8. You (to understand) the use of the Present Indefinite and the Present Continuous quite well? 9. What you (to smile), Kitty? 11. I often (to meet) you at the corner of this street. You (to wait) for anybody? 12. You usually (to go) through the park? – Not usually, it's only today that I (to go) here. 13. You (to hear) anything? – Yes, somebody (to knock) at the door. 14. They still (to discuss) where to go now.

Exercise 76.

Use the verbs given in brackets in the Present Indefinite or the Present Continuous tenses:

1. Why you (to walk) so fast today? You usually (to walk) quite slowly. – I (to hurry). I am afraid to miss the train. 2. Cuckoos (not to build) nests. They (to use) the nests of other birds. 3. I always (to buy) lottery tickets but I seldom (to win). 4. You can't have the book now because my brother (to read) it. 5. Some people (to do) everything with their left hand. 6. Who (to make) that terrible noise? – It's my son. 7. How you (to feel)? 8. Switch on the light. It (to get) dark. 9. You (to understand) the rule? 10. The sun (to set) late in summer. 11. What you (to look for)? – We (to look for) our grandmother's spectacles. 12. I (not to know) what he (to want). 13. What time she (to come) here as a rule? 14. Look, snow still (to fall). 15. It often (to train) in October.

Exercise 77.

Use the verbs in brackets in Present Continuous:

1. The clock in the next room (to strike). 2. Father and Mother (to get up). 3. My sister tea (to make). 4. They breakfast (to have). 5. My brother continually about his wife's health (to worry). 6. I my homework (to do). 7. Mother dinner (to cook) Grandmother in her (to help). 8. It dark (to get) the wind (to blow). The sun not (to shine). It (to rain). We home (to run). 9. Hallo! Where you ? – I to the library. you there, too? – No, I to a friend of mine (to go). 10. You Always at the lessons (to talk).

Exercise 78.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. He is writing a new play. 2. When I came in he didn't see me, as he was doing something. 3. It was raining hard yesterday when I left home. 4. At seven o'clock to-morrow I shall be approaching Kiev. 5. The train couldn't stop, as it was traveling too fast at that time. 6. What will you be doing at ten o'clock to-morrow? – I shall be working in the garden. 6. He will be waiting for you in the park at ten o'clock.

Exercise 79.

Translate into English paying attention to the formation of Participle

I:

Оқып отырған, істеп жатырған, ашып жатырған, жіберіп жатырған, қарап тұрған, отырған, айтып жатырған, алып жатырған, қарсылап жатырған, келе жатырған, бара жатырған.

Exercise 80.

Comment on the use of the Present Continuous Tense.

- I. 1. a) – What are you reading now, Daddy?
- I am not reading. I am writing.
b) Ah, now I see what you're driving at.
2. a) Who is she? Where does she come from? What's she doing here? That's what they keep on asking.
b) Tell me about Ann. Is she still living in this town?
Nick is coming to see us tomorrow.

3. a) Nick is coming to see us tomorrow.
b) What train are you taking for your journey tonight?
- II. 1.a) Look! Somebody is coming.
b) She is coming back on Monday.
2. a) "Where is Dick?" "He is playing tennis with Tom and Jack".
b) Tomorrow I am playing tennis with Tom and Jack.
3. a) "What is Kate doing?" "She is reading Alice in Wonderland".
b) "Are you doing anything this evening?" "No, I am not".
4. a) They are having dinner now.
b) What are we having for dinner tonight?

Exercise 81.

Use subordinate clauses of time or condition instead of italicized parts of the following sentences. Make some changes if necessary. Pay attention to the use of tenses.

1. *I shall call my father* and he will help me to translate this sentence. 2. *He will lend me his typewriter for two days* and I shall type this letter. 3. *He will take this medicine* and will be all right. 4. *You smoke a lot*, so you will have headaches. 5. *We shall go to the Baltic Sea* and bathe a lot there. 6. *He will put the key into the box* and you will find it there quite easily. 7. *She will pass her exams successfully* and go to the south. 8. *Your classes are over*, so come to the cinema with me. 9. *We shall come in time* and find them there. 10. *I shall book the tickets* and let you know about it.

Exercise 82.

Put the verbs in brackets into the Future Continuous. Comment on the use of the Future Continuous.

1. Don't ring her up at 12 o'clock. She (to write) her composition then. 2. At this time tomorrow the boys of our group (to play) football. 3. When we arrive in Leningrad, it probably (to rain). 4. It is nearly autumn, soon the leaves (to change) colour. 5. Let's wait here; Tower Bridge (to open) in a minute to let that ship through. 6. Don't ask her anything. Next thing she (to tell) you she is right.

Exercise 83.

Use the Present Indefinite, the Present Continuous or the Present Perfect instead of the infinitives in brackets:

1. Will you, please, lend me your pen for a moment? I (to leave) mine at home and now (to have) nothing to write with. – I (to be) sorry, but I (to be going) to write myself. Ann (not to write), she can give you her pen. 2. You (to read) "The Gadfly" by Voynich? – I (to read) it now, I (not to finish) it yet. It (to be) a very good book, I (to like) it very much. 3. We (to go) to the café "Cosmos" tonight. You ever (to be) there? 4. Where (to be) Ann? – She (to be) in the kitchen. – What she (to do) there? – She (to wash up). – I already (to help) my mother with the housework and (to come) to ask Ann to go to the cinema with me. 5. Don't forget we (to have) a party tomorrow, be sure to bring

Bob with you if he (to come) back from St.Petersburg. 6. (to be)there anything the matter with you? You (to be) so pale. – Nothing the matter. I just (to finish) my work and I (to be) a little tired. 7. Who (to play) the piano? Mary still (to have) her music lesson? – No. The lesson (to be) over and the teacher already (to go). Mother (to play) for little Kitty. 8. Ring me up when you (to be) free. I (to have) something to discuss with you. 9. I (not to hear) the news yet. 10. Hurry up if you (to want) to go out with me. 11. She (to send) me a letter that she (to come) in a few days. 12. You (to understand) what they (to talk) about? 13. When she (to call) on us she always (to bring) some toys for my little daughter. 14. What you (to look) for? – I (to look) for my dictionary. I just (to see) it somewhere. I (to think) it (to lie) on the bookshelf.

Exercise 84.

Rewrite the following sentences using Present Perfect and the adverbial modifiers in brackets:

1. He gets up at 7 a. m (just). 2. I usually fly to Kiev (never). 3. I watch TV programmers every day (recently). 4. I need lot of English books in the original (of late). 5. Kate reads historical novels with great interest (always). 6. He boys are finishing breakfast (not yet). 7. Does he read books on travel? (ever) 8. I look through the morning newspapers at breakfast (already). 9. Nick shows his films to his friends (three times). 10. I meet him on my way to the office (often).

Exercise 85.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. They have informed us of the time of the arrival of the vessel. 2. I have spoken to him about it several times. 3. Have you opened the window in my room? 4. I have opened the window in my room twice today. 5. After they had counted the cases, they sent them to the factory. 6. We had come to an agreement before they arrived. 7. He said that in the summer the had received letters from her every week. 8. They will have token examinations by the first of July. 9. He had graduated from the University when the war began. 10. Come at four o'clock. The director will have signed all the documents by that time

Exercise 86.

Change the tense of the verbs in the following sentences into the Present Perfect. Translate into Kazakh.

1. I am eating my breakfast. 2. We are drinking water. 3. He is bringing them some meat and vegetables. 4. You are putting the dishes on the table. 5. They are having tea. 6. She is taking the dirty plates from the table. 7. The children are putting on their coats. 8. The pupils are writing a dictation. 9. My friend is helping me to solve a difficult problem. 10. I am learning a poem. 11. She is telling them an nteresting story. 12. Kate is sweeping the floor. 13. The waiter is putting a bottle of lemonade in front of him. 14. Susan is making a new dress for her birthday party. 15. She is opening a box of chocolates.

Exercise 87.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Continuous* or *Present Perfect*.

1. What are you (to talk) about? 2. We have just (to talk) about it. 3. He has just (to say) something about it. 4. She is (to tell) them some interesting story. 5. He has (to tell) us nothing about it. 6. She has (to tell) them some stories about dogs. 7. We have (to have) two lessons today. 8. They are (to have) a meeting. 9. She has not (to speak yet). 10. They have (to ask) me several questions. 11. He has already (to learn) the rule. 12. I am (to write) an exercise. 13. What is he (to do)? – He is (to read) a newspaper. 14. Have you (to read) any stories by Jack London? 15. What are you (to do) here? – I am (to write) a letter to my friends. 16. Who has (to write) this article? 17. What language are you (to study)? 18. We have already (to learn) a lot of English words. 19. What is she (to teach) them? 20. Who has (to teach) you to do it? 21. He has just (to do) something for us. 22. Have you (to find) the book? 23. What are you (to look) for?

Exercise 88.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Perfect* or *Past Simple*.

1. We (to travel) around Europe last year. 2. My father knows so much because he (to travel) a lot. 3. I (to see) Pete today. 4. She (to see) this film last Sunday. 5. Alex (to meet) his friend two hours ago. 6. I just (to meet) our teacher. 7. The children already (to decide) what to do with the books. 8. Yesterday they (to decide) to help their grandmother. 9. Helen speaks French so well because she (to live) in France. 10. She (to live) there last year. 11. The rain (to stop) and the sun is shining in the sky again. 12. The rain (to stop) half an hour ago. 13. Mary (to buy) a new hat. 14. I (to buy) a pair of gloves yesterday. 15. The wind (to blow) off the man's hat, and he cannot catch it. 16. The weather (to change), and we can go for a walk. 17. The wind (to change) in the morning.

Exercise 89.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Perfect* or *Past Simple*.

1. I already (to do) my homework. Now I can go for a walk. 2. I (to do) my homework yesterday. 3. He just (to come) home. 4. He (to come) home a minute ago. 5. Nick (to play) football yesterday. 6. She already (to come) from school. Now she is doing her homework. 7. I (to read) this book last year. 8. I (to read) this book this year. 9. I never (to be) to Washington. 10. You ever (to be) to New York? 11. You ever (to see) the eruption of a volcano? 12. I (not yet to eat) today. 13. He (not to eat) yesterday. 14. You (to play) the piano yesterday? 15. You (to play) the piano today? 16. What you (to prepare) for today? 17. Look at this bird-house. Mike (to make) it himself. He (to make) it last Sunday. 18. Where you (to put) my pen? I cannot find it. 19. You (to see) Mary today? 20.

When you (to see) Mary? – I (to see) her last week. 21. Your mother (to promise) to take you to the theatre? 22. Look at my new dress! I (to make) it myself. 23. He is not at school today, he (to fall) ill. – When he (to fall) ill? – He (to fall) ill yesterday.

Exercise 90.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Perfect or Past Simple*.

1. At last I (to do) all my homework: now I shall go out. 2. The building of the house (to begin) early in April. 3. The rain (to stop) but a cold wind is still blowing. 4. We already (to solve) the problem. 5. He (to come) a moment ago. 6. I never (to speak) to him. 7. He just (to finish) his work. 8. You (to make) any spelling mistakes in your dictation? 9. It (to be) very cold yesterday. 10. When you (to meet) him? 11. I (not to see) him since 1987. 12. How many mushrooms you (to gather)? 13. Where you (to put) the newspaper? I want to read it, but cannot find it anywhere. 14. The new school (to begin) working last year. 15. You (to read) all the books on this shelf? 16. I (not to see) my cousin since last year. 17. Why you (to put) these things in the wrong place? 18. Why you (to leave) the door open? You will catch cold sitting in the draught. 19. “We (not to meet) for such a long time!” said my friend. “Yes, indeed,” I answered, “and we both (to grow).” 20. What books you (to read) when you (to live) in the country? 21. They (not yet to come) from the south. 22. He (to be) ill last week, but now he (to recover). 23. If everybody (to read) this new novel, let’s discuss it. 24. You (to book) tickets? – Yes, I ... I (to book) them several days ago. 25. I can hardly recognize you. I (not to see) you since you (to leave) for Moscow. And you (to change) so much.

Exercise 91.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Perfect or Past Simple*.

1. He (to be) abroad five years ago. 2. You (to be) in the Caucasus last year? 3. They (to leave) England when he (to be) still a child. 4. He (not yet to come) back. 5. He (to go) already? 6. When you (to see) him last? 7. I (not to see) him for ages. 8. His health (to improve) greatly since I (to see) him last. 9. Last night I (to feel) tired and (to go) to bed very early. 10. Where you (to spend) your holidays? 11. You ever (to spend) your holidays in the Crimea? 12. While traveling in the Crimea I (to meet) your friend. 13. I never (to visit) that place. 14. He (to visit) that place last year. 15. I just (to get) a letter from Tom. 16. You (to take) any photographs while traveling in the south?

Exercise 92.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Present Perfect or Past Simple*.

1. The sun (not to rise) yet, but the sky in the east is getting lighter every minute. 2. I (to see) you walking along the street the other day with a heavy bag. 3. I (not to read) the newspaper today. 4. It is very late, and trams (to stop)

running: we must find a taxi to get home. 5. How many times you (to be) to St. Petersburg? 6. At last I (to translate) this article: now I shall have a little rest. 7. We (to go) to the country yesterday, but the rain (to spoil) all the pleasure. 8. My watch was going in the morning, but now it (to stop). 9. The lecture (not yet to begin) and the students are talking in the classroom. 10. She just (to go) out. 11. She (to leave) the room a moment ago. 12. We (not yet to solve) the problem. 13. When it all (to happen)? 14. The morning was cold and rainy, but since ten o'clock the weather (to change) and now the sun is shining brightly. 15. Show me the dress which you (to make). 16. Oh, how dark it is! A large black cloud (to cover) the sky. I think it will start raining in a few minutes. 17. Oh, close the window! Look, all my papers (to fall) on the floor because of the wind. 18. When you (to open) the window? – I (to open) it ten minutes ago.

Exercise 93.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Past Simple* or *Past Perfect*.

1. When I (to come) home, mother already (to cook) dinner. 2. When father (to return) from work, we already (to do) our homework. 3. When the teacher (to enter) the classroom, the pupils already (to open) their books. 4. Kate (to give) me the book which she (to buy) the day before. 5. Nick (to show) the teacher the picture which he (to draw). 6. The boy (to give) the goats the grass which he (to bring) from the field. 7. Mother (to see) that Nick (not to wash) his hands. 8. The teacher (to understand) that Lena (not to do) her homework. 9. I (to know) that my friend (not yet to come). 10. Tom (to return) from the cinema by five o'clock. 11. I (to finish) my homework by seven o'clock. 12. He (to think) that he (to lose) the money. 13. Ann (to tell) me that she (to see) an interesting film. 14. When I (to wake) up yesterday, father already (to go) to work. 15. Nick (to think) that his father (not yet to come) home. 16. Mary (to tell) us that she (to cook) a good dinner. 17. Yesterday I (to find) the book which I (to lose) in summer. 18. When we (to come) to the station, the train already (to leave).

Exercise 94.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Past Simple* or *Past Perfect*.

1. He (to study) French before he (to enter) the university. 2. Lanny (to say) that he (to get) his education in Cape Town. 3. The boy (to wait) to act the main part in the play because he (to organize) the theatre. 4. Lanny (not to know) who (to attack) him in the darkness. 5. The girl (to be) glad that she (to find) a seat near the window. 6. Suddenly he (to remember) that he (not to ring) her up in the morning. 7. By the time the train (to reach) the city, he (to make) friends with many passengers. 8. When his uncle (to leave), he (to hurry) to the station to book a ticket. 9. She (to think) that Gert and Lanny (to quarrel). 10. By the time we (to come) to see him, he (to return) home. 11. During the holidays my friend (to visit) the village where he (to live) in his childhood. 12. When they (to enter) the hall, the performance already (to begin). 13. When I came home, my mother (to tell) me that she (to receive) a letter from

grandfather. 14. Where you (to work) before you (to enter) the institute? 15. By two o'clock the teacher (to examine) all the students. 16. On my way to school I (to remember) that I (to leave) my report at home. 17. All my friends (to be) glad to heart that I (to pass) all the examinations successfully. 18. Poor Oliver (to lie) unconscious on the spot where Sikes (to leave) him. 19. He (to open) his eyes, (to look) around and (to try) to remember what (to happen) to him. 20. All the passengers (to see) at once that the old man (to travel) a great deal in his life.

Exercise 95.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the Past Simple, Past Continuous and Past Perfect.

Last night we (to go) to a football match. We (to take) a bus. The bus (to be) full of people as many people (to want) to see the match. We (to get) off the bus and (to go) in the direction of the stadium. While we (to cross) the road, I (to see) Victor. He (to stand) at the corner. He said he (to wait) for his friend who (to come) to St.Petersburg the day before and (to wish) to see the new stadium. A man (to come) up to me and asked if I (to have) a spare ticket for the match. Victor told us that two boys just (to ask) him whether he (to have) a spare ticket. We (to enter) the stadium just as the football players (to come) out on to the field. At the entrance to the stadium we (to meet) Sergei. He (to show) us to our seats and we (to agree) to meet in the refreshment-room during the interval. He (to ask) me if I (to play) football in my childhood.

Exercise 96.

Open the brackets using the verbs in one of the future tenses: Future Simple, Future Continuous или Future Perfect.

1. I (to do) my homework tomorrow. 2. I (to do) my homework at six o'clock tomorrow. 3. I (to do) my homework by six o'clock tomorrow. 4. When I come home tomorrow, my family (to have) supper. 5. When you come to my place tomorrow, I (to read) your book. I (to do) my homework by the time you come. 6. Don't come to my place tomorrow. (to write) a composition the whole evening. 7. I (not to go) to the cinema tomorrow. I (to watch) TV the whole evening. 8. What you (to do) tomorrow? 9. What you (to do) at eight o'clock tomorrow? 10. You (to play) volley-ball tomorrow? 11. You (to do) this work by next Sunday? 12. When you (to go) to see your friend next time? 13. How many pages you (to read) by five o'clock tomorrow? 14. Tomorrow I (to begin) doing my homework as soon as I come from school. I (to do) my homework from three till six. My father (to come) home at seven o'clock tomorrow. My father (to come) home at seven o'clock tomorrow. I ((to do) all my homework by the time he comes, and we (to go) for a walk together.

Exercise 97.

Open the brackets using the verbs in one of the future tenses: Present Simple, Present Continuous, Present Perfect, Present Perfect Continuous.

1. He (to run) now. He (to run) for ten minutes without any rest. 2. What they (to do) now? – They (to work) in the reading-room. They (to work) there

for already three hours. 3. Where he (to be) now? – He (to be) in the garden. He (to play) volley-ball with his friends. They (to play) since breakfast time. 4. I (to live) in St.Petersburg. I (to live) in St.Petersburg since 1990. 5. She already (to do) her homework for two hours; but she (not yet to do) half of it. 6. I (to wait) for you since two o'clock. 7. What you (to do)? – I (to read) for already two hours. I already (to read) sixty pages. 8. This man (to be) a writer. He (to write) books. He (to write) books since he was a young man. He already (to write) eight books. 9. What you (to do) here since morning? 10. Lena is a very good girl. She always (to help) her mother about the house. Today she (to help) her mother since morning. They already (to wash) the floor and (to dust) the furniture. Now they (to cook) dinner together. 11. This is the factory where my father (to work). He (to work) here for fifteen years. 12. You (to find) your notebook? – No! I still (to look) for it. I already (to look) for it for two hours, but (not yet to find) it. 13. You (to play) with a ball for already three hours. Go home and your homework. 14. Wake up! You (to sleep) for ten hours already. 15. I (to wait) for a letter from my cousin for a month already, but (not yet to receive) it. 16. It is difficult for me to speak about this opera as I (not to hear) it. 17. I just (to receive) a letter from my granny, but I (not yet to receive) any letters from my parents. 18. The weather (to be) fine today. The sun (to shine) ever since we got up. 19. Every day I (to wind) up my watch at 10 o'clock in the evening. 30. Come along, Henry, what you (to do) now? I (to wait) for you a long time. 21. Where your gloves (to be)? – I (to put) them into my pocket.

Exercise 98.

Explain the use of tenses in the following sentences.

1. I've been living next door to Alison for five years but I've never spoken to her. 2. Marie has been going out with Steve for a year now, and they are planning to get married. 3. This fund has been helping people for generations. 4. The inspector has been keeping a watch on the house for the last few days. 5. "I have been keeping this bracelet specially for you," said my grandmother. 6. In my eyes you can see all the love that I've been feeling. 7. I've been waiting for this holiday for so long! 8. Where are my letters? Have you been hiding things from me again? 9. What a smell? What have you been smoking? 10. For over three centuries farmers in the Philippines have been growing the finest tobacco leaf in the world.

Exercise 99.

Answer the following questions. Use *since* and *for* in your answers.

1. How long have you been living in this city? 2. How long have you been studying in this class? 3. How long have you been studying English? 4. Have you been waiting for me for a long time? 5. How long have you been smoking? 6. Have you been running this firm for a long time? 7. How long have you been wearing glasses? 8. How long have we already been working? 9. Have you been doing your present job long? 10. How long have you been peeling all those potatoes?

Exercise 100.

Explain the use of *The Past Perfect Continuous* in the following sentences.

1. We were tired as we had been walking for more than an hour. It was time to rest a little. 2. The boy had been reading the task in physics for a long time but still he didn't understand it. 3. Mrs. Jackson was one of the best teachers at the school. She had been teaching for twenty years. 4. Dora was writing a letter to her boyfriend. She had been writing it since she got home from class. 5. My eyes were getting tired. I had been reading for two hours. I decided to make a break. 6. Mr. Robbins liked his job. He had been working at the company for fifteen years. 7. She put aside the sweater which she had been knitting. 8. The secretary closed the file which she had just been looking through. 9. They had been driving all night when finally they saw the lights of a big city. 10. When I entered the flat, I saw that everything was in a mess. Somebody had been searching the rooms. 11. The boys had black eyes and torn trousers. They had been fighting. 12. At last he got the opportunity he had been waiting for so long.

Exercise 101.

Read and translate the following sentences. Explain the use of *The Future Perfect Continuous*.

1.— Do you think you'll be tired in the evening? – Yes, I'll have already been working for eight hours. 2. By this time tomorrow, I'll have been travelling for twelve hours. 3. By this time tomorrow you get there the people will have been waiting for an hour already. 4. By May, he'll have been riding that bike for five years. 5. By Christmas, I'll have been working for this company for twenty years.

Exercise 102.

Ask questions to the following sentences beginning "*How long ...?*". Use the words in brackets in *Present Perfect* or *Present Perfect Continuous*.

1. It's our wedding anniversary today. (be married) 2. Did you know that Renata wore contacts lenses? (wear, them) 3. Where were you? It's ten past seven. (be, here) 4. Maxim and I are getting married next month. (know, him). 5. They live in London now. (live, there) 6. The job is very easy for me now. (work, here) 7. The children are in the garden. (be outside) 8. The boys are playing football. (they, do) 9. Richard is on a business trip. (be, away)

Exercise 103.

Use the right forms of the verbs in brackets.

1. She went up to her bedroom on the second floor, and she (feel) so tired, that she (fall) asleep. Soon after she (lie) down. She (have) a long and difficult day. 2. Mrs. Foster paid the driver and (ring) the bell. She (wait) but there (be) no answer. Everybody (leave) for the party. 3. He moved across the room to the box. He (pick) up a piece of paper that (lie) besides the box, (study) it carefully,

(put) it down, (look) in the box, and then again at the paper. He (do) this for perhaps half an hour. He (know) who (write) the paper. 4. Mary took his coat and (hang) it in the hall. They not (meet) for quite a long time. Then she (make) the drinks, the way he (teach) her, and soon he (tell) her the news which she not (hear) yet. 5. Every day she took her grandchildren for walks. They (be) so beautiful! She (feed) them cakes, and (buy) them presents, and (tell) them charming stories. Those walks (become) a tradition with them.

Exercise 104.

Use the right forms of the verbs in brackets.

1. In the middle of the night Mary woke up. Heavy rain (start) falling again and the wind (blow) hard round the walls of the old house. Suddenly she (hear) the crying that she (hear) the night before. This time she decided to discover who it (be). 2. She (leave) her room and (go) to the other side of the house. At last she (find) the right room. She (push) the door open and (see) a big room with beautiful old furniture and pictures. A boy (lie) in a large bed. He (look) tired and cross. He stared at Mary. "Who you (be)? You (be) a dream?" he whispered. 3. "I (be) your second cousin, and your father (be) my uncle," Mary explained. "I (hear) that you are ill. Your father often (come) and see you?" – "Not often. He not (like) to see me because it (make) him (remember) my mother. She (die) when I (bear), so he almost (hate) me, I think." 4. "Why you (say) you (die)?" asked Mary. "I always (be) ill. I nearly (die) several times. My doctor (feel) sure that I (be doing) to die. But he's my father's cousin, and poor, so he (want) me to die. Then he (get) all the money when my father (die)." 5. "Last year we (have) a grand doctor from London, who (advise) me to go out in the fresh air. But I not (like) fresh air. I want to lie in bed. All the servants (have) to do what I want, because if I (get) angry, I (become) ill." Mary was furious, and it (make) her (feel) strong. "You are the silliest boy I ever (meet)," she (cry).

Exercise 105.

Practice in using the Passive Voice. Change the following statements into their passive equivalents.

Example 1. They know Tokyo is a huge city.

It is known that Tokyo is a huge city.

1. They believe doctors are always ready to help people who are ill. 2. Everyone expects the new discovery will bring positive results. 3. People say that New York was discovered by an Italian navigators. 4. They say that according to Russian tradition honored guests are welcomed with bread and salt.

Example 2. They offered me a cup of tea.

I was offered a cup of tea.

A cup of tea was offered to me.

1. They gave me a form to fill in. 2. They granted me a visa. 3. We'll offer him by all means. 4. He has just told us a very amusing story.

Exercise 106.

Put the following sentences into the Passive Voice.

a) 1.They often invite me to their parties. 2. People speak English in different parts of the world. 3. One uses milk for making butter. 4. We form the Passive Voice with the help of the auxiliary verb “to be”. 5. They build a lot of new houses in this district every year.

b) 1.They built this house in 1950. 2.Somebody locked the front door. 3.Someone broke my pen last night. 4.They punished the boy for that. 5. They finished their work in time.

c) 1. People will forget it very soon. 2. They will translate this book next year. 3. They will tell you when to come. 4. Where will they build a new library? 5. Someone will ask about it.

Exercise 107.

Put the following sentences into the Passive Voice.

M o d e l: They laughed at him.

He was laughed at.

1. People speak much of him. 2. They will look after the children well. 3. People will laugh at you if say it. 4.They sent for the doctor immediately. 5. Everybody listened to her attentively. 6. They always wait for me after the lessons. 7. Nobody took notice of this little boy. 8. Everybody lost sight of the boat in the fog. 9.Why are they laughing at her? 10. I wonder whether they will listen to him. 11. Students often refer to these books. 12. Nobody has ever spoken to me in such a way. 13. If they send for you don't refuse to come. 14. They have not referred to that incident since then.

Exercise 108.

Translate into English paying attention to the Passive Voice.

Өткен жылы бізде жаңа пьеса қойылды. Пьеса әуелі оқылып және талданды. Оның барлығымызға ұнағаны соншама, бірнеше күндер бойы сол туралы айтылып жүрілді. Рөлдерді ойнауды бөліп бергеннен кейін, жаттығу басталды. Бір күндері театрдың режиссеры, бізге келді. Ол бізге бірнеше құнды кеңестерін берді. Ақыр аяғында спектакль дайын болды. Пьесаны институттық кешенде қоюға шешім қабылдады. Мұндай жағдайда шақыру қағазын жібереді. Біздерде қаланың барлық оқу орындарына шақыру қағазын жібердік. Көптен күткен кешіміз болды. Зал түгелдей толық, барлық орындар бос болмады. Соңғы қоңырау соғылды. Спектакль басталды. Біздің пьессамызды көрушілеріміз қошеметпен қарсы алды. Барлық жақтан дауыс естілді: «Декорацияны кім ойып жасады, костюмдерді кім жасады?». Спектакль үлкен табысқа ие болды және осыдан кейін бірнеше рет қайтадан қойылды.

Exercise 109.

Insert the following sentences in the Passive Voice, paying attention to the place of the preposition.

E.g. We often speak *about* her. – She is often spoken *about*.

1. We thought about our friend all the time. 2. The doctor will operate on him in a week. 3. The teacher sent for the pupil's parents. 4. They looked for the newspaper everywhere. 5. Nobody slept in the bed. 6. The neighbour asked for the telegram. 7. Everybody listened to the lecturer with great attention. 8. The senior students laughed at the freshman. 9. The group spoke to the headmistress yesterday. 10. The young mothers looked after their babies with great care. 11. Nobody lived in that old house. 12. They sent for Jim and told him to prepare a report on that subject.

Exercise 110.

Insert the following sentences in the *Passive Voice*.

E.g. Mother *waters* the flowers in the evening. – The flowers *are watered* in the evening (by Mother).

1. A marble pavilion protects the house. 2. The boys will paint the roof of the house. 3. Tom Sawyer whitewashed the fence. 4. Her daughters gave her three beautiful dishes as a birthday present. 5. Tom gave Nick a book for his birthday. 6. Our mother tells us stories every evening. 7. Lydia will show you a new book of pictures. 8. A boy showed her the way. 9. They will send us a box of fruit. 10. Five or six small children followed them. 11. In summer the boys often drive the horses to the fields. 12. Ivan Susanin led the Poles into the thickest part of the forest. 13. The waves carried the boat away. 14. We shall do the translation in the evening. 15. They water the flowers regularly. 16. You promised me these books long ago. 17. Bessie's father gave her a complete set of Walter Scott's works. 18. Irene's husband brought her some beautiful shells from the south. 19. The explorers gave the newspaper reporters a long interview. 20. Mr. Wilson will teach you English. 21. The doctor ordered me a month's rest from studying.

Exercise 111.

Put the given words in the *Passive Voice*, making necessary changes.

1. She *took* a long time to write the composition, but at last she wrote it. 2. Don't put the cup there: somebody *will break* it. 3. Why weren't you at the birthday party? – They *didn't invite* me. 4. We met many difficulties, but all the same we *finished* the work in time. 5. We *shall leave* you behind if you are not quick. 6. I *spent* all my money on books last month. 7. I don't think we *shall do* all this work today: there is too much of it. 8. It's a very funny thing that when I start doing this, somebody always *stops* me. 9. Don't leave these sweets on the table: somebody *will eat* them. 10. The elephant *broke* the branch of the tree. 11. The bees *attacked* the bear when it tried to take their honey.

Exercise 112.

Give the following sentences in the *Passive Voice*.

1. You must do three of these exercises tomorrow. 2. You can find the book you need in any library. 3. We must send these letters at once. 4. You must take the box to the station. 5. You can cross the river on a raft. 6. The workers can

finish the building of the house very soon. 7. You must return the books the day after tomorrow. 8. I can easily forgive this mistake. 9. You can find such berries everywhere. 10. You must do this work very carefully. 11. The doctor says they must take her to hospital. 12. You can do the work in three days. 13. The students must return all the library books before each summer vacation. 14. Monkeys can climb even the tallest trees.

Exercise 113.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Passive Voice*.

1. At the last competition the first prize (to win) by our team. 2. The question (to settle) as soon as they arrived. 3. Your report must (to divide) into two chapters. 4. Soon he (to send) to a sanatorium. 5. The book (to discuss) at the next conference. 6. The composition must (to hand) in on Wednesday. 7. Yesterday he (to tell) to prepare a speech. 8. The article (to publish) last week, if I am not mistaken. 9. The lectures (to attend) by all of us. 10. A taxi (to call) fifteen minutes ago, so we are expecting it any moment. 11. The young man (to introduce) to me only a couple of hours ago, but it seems to me that I've known him for years. 12. The rule explained by the teacher at the last lesson (to understand) by all of us. 13. The poem was so beautiful that it (to learn) by everybody. 14. I hope the invitation (to accept) by everybody. 15. The letter (to post) in half an hour. 16. It seems to me that music (to hear) from the next room.

Exercise 114.

Open the brackets using the verbs in the *Active or Passive Voice*.

1. Nobody (to see) him yesterday. 2. The telegram (to receive) tomorrow. 3. He (to give) me this book next week. 4. The answer to this question can (to find) in the encyclopedia. 5. We (to show) the historical monuments of the capital to the delegation. 6. You can (to find) interesting information about the life in the USA in this book. 7. Budapest (to divide) by the Danube into two parts: Buda and Pest. 8. Yuri Dolgoruki (to found) Moscow in 1147. 9. Moscow University (to found) by Lomonosov. 10. We (to call) Zhukovski the father of Russian aviation.

Exercise 115.

Insert the following sentences in the *Passive Voice*.

1. The students greeted the famous lecturer warmly. 2. They have recently built a huge plant in the town of N. 3. We must finish the work by tomorrow. 4. When I fell ill, my mother sent for the doctor. 5. They looked for the girl everywhere. 6. They did not listen to the boy. 7. She looks after the patients well. 8. They asked for our address. 9. My father looked through these papers this morning. 10. He will give my brother English lessons. 11. A friend of his has shown me an interesting magazine. 12. His friend told him everything. 13. They showed Helen the nearest way to the theatre. 14. He gave his patient some good advice. 15. Mary has told me the news. 16. The people looked at the little boy with interest. 17. They examined the paper attentively.

Exercise 116.

Insert the following sentences in the *Passive Voice*.

1. We asked him about his holidays. 2. They have already discussed the novel. 3. He did not give me his address. 4. She showed him the way to the metro station. 5. He will introduce me to his friends. 6. They are building a bridge over the river. 7. I haven't yet translated the article. 8. We were looking at the man with great surprise. 9. You will speak about the film at the lesson. 10. The headmistress sent for the pupil's parents. 11. Has the secretary typed the letters? – No, she is typing them now.

Exercise 117.

Insert the following sentences in the *Passive Voice*.

1. We turn on the light when it is dark. 2. The students finished their translation in time. 3. Helen washed the dishes. 4. Betty often took her younger brother for a walk. 5. Mother has made some coffee. 6. Have you ironed your dress yet? 7. Nina mispronounced this word. 8. They have told her the truth. 9. She promised us an interesting entertainment. 10. One uses chalk for writing on the blackboard. 11. I shall finish my work about seven o'clock. 12. Somebody has opened the door. 13. The waitress brought in the coffee. 14. One of my friends took me to the cinema last week. 15. We shall finish this work in time. 16. They built this house in 1960. 17. They were selling new children's books in that shop when I entered it yesterday. 18. A large group of young people joined us on our way to the station. 19. A young teacher started a school in this village. 20. They are translating this article now. 21. Galsworthy wrote "The Forsyte Saga". 21. Thousands of people attended this meeting. 22. He has just interrupted me. 23. The teacher has explained it to us.

Exercise 118.

Form the following adjectives in the Comparative and the Superlative Degree:

Small, long, clean, large, dark, light, rich, poor, big, quick, show, sharp, deep, high, strong, near, cheap, thin, thick, interesting, famous, easy, important, beautiful, weak, difficult, comfortable, early, happy, pale, late, lazy, expensive, sad, practical, pretty, full, bright, dirty, fresh, dangerous, nice, useful, talkative, progressive, bad, good, fat, much, wet, powerful, funny, little, far, many.

Exercise 119.

Translate into Kazakh language:

A higher price, a lower price, a longer pencil, a shorter pencil, a more expensive overcoat, a cheaper overcoat, a colder day, a warmer day, a kinder man, a lighter room, a darker room, a prettier girl, a smaller garden, a larger garden, fresher air, fatter meat, a worse dress, a better dress.

Exercise 120.

Translate into English:

1. Біздің бақ сіздікінен кіші. 2. Бұл парк үлкен анаған қарағанда. 3. Онда аз жұмыс, өткен жылға қарағанда. 4. Оның пәтері сіздердің пәтерлеріңізден үлкен.

Exercise 121.

Form the degrees of comparison of the following adjectives and adverbs.

Small, full, comfortable, old, beautiful, good, big, difficult, easy, short, long, famous, bad, rich, large, progressive, high, many, much, far, little, late, early, fast, slowly, well, badly.

Exercise 122.

Use the adjectives (adverbs) in brackets in the suitable degrees of comparison.

1. The text of lesson 5 is (interesting) than this one. 2. I live far from the studio but my friend lives (far). 3. This sculpture group is the (beautiful) in the collection. 4. I get up early, but my grandma gets up (early). 5. I have (much) work therefore I have (little) free time than you. 6. Which is the (famous) Russian Picture Gallery? 7. This book on contemporary Art is (good) than the one you gave me last time. 8. I like summer (well) of all because it is the (warm) season. 9. In our group Oleg draws (bad) of all. 10. the Moscow State University building is the (high) in the city.

Exercise 123.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. Which is (large): the United States or Canada? 2. What is the name of the (big) port in the United States? 3. Moscow is the (large) city in Russia. 4. The London underground is the (old) in the world. 5. There is a (great) number of cars and buses in the streets of Moscow than in any other city of Russia. 6. St.Petersburg is one of the (beautiful) cities in the world. 7. The rivers in America are much (big) than those in England. 8. The island of Great Britain is (small) than Greenland. 9. What is the name of the (high) mountain in Asia? 10. The English Channel is (wide) than the Straits of Gibraltar. 11. Russia is a very (large) country.

Exercise 124.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. This man is (tall) than that one. 2. Asia is (large) than Australia. 3. The Volga is (short) than the Mississippi. 4. Which building is the (high) in Moscow? 5. Mary is a (good) student than Lucy. 6. The Alps are (high) than the Urals. 7. This garden is the (beautiful) in our town. 8. She speaks Italian (good) than English. 9. Is the word “newspaper” (long) than the word “book”? 10. The Thames is (short) than the Volga. 11. The Arctic Ocean is (cold) than the Indian Ocean. 12. Chinese is (difficult) than English. 13. Spanish is (easy) than German. 14. She is not so (busy) as I am. 15. It is as (cold) today as it was yesterday. 16. She is not so (fond) of sports as my brother is. 17. Today the weather is (cold) than it was yesterday.

18. This book is (interesting) of all I have read this year. 19. January is the (cold) month of the year. 20. My sister speaks English (bad) than I do. 21. Which is the (hot) month of the year? 22. Which is the (beautiful) place in this part of the country? 23. This nice-looking girl is the (good) student in our group.

Exercise 125.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. Oil is (light) than water. 2. We shall wait for a (dry) day to go on the excursion. 3. A bus is (fast) than a tram. 4. Take some of these sweets: they are very (nice). They are (nice) than the sweets in that box. 5. He clearly did not like the explanation, and as he listened to it, he became (angry) and (angry). 6. He worked (hard) and (hard) as the end of the term came nearer. 7. The (tall) trees in the world grow in California. 8. Please be (careful) next time and don't spill the milk again. 9. Bobby was a (quiet) child. He was (quiet) than his sister. 10. Her eyes are (grey) than mine. 11. He was the (fat) man in the village. 12. As he went on, the box became (heavy) and (heavy). 13. My sister is the (tall) girl in the class. 14. Who is the (attentive) student in your group? 15. It is autumn. Every day the air becomes (cold), the leaves (yellow). 16. This is the (beautiful) view I have ever seen in my life. 17. Your handwriting is now (good) than it was last year; but still it is not so (good) as Nick's handwriting. Nick has a (good) handwriting than you. And of course Nellie has the (good) handwriting of all.

Exercise 126.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. Which is (large): the United States or Canada? 2. What is the name of the (big) port in the United States? 3. Moscow is the (large) city in Russia. 4. The London underground is the (old) in the world. 5. There is a (great) number of cars and buses in the streets of Moscow than in any other city of Russia. 6. St. Petersburg is one of the (beautiful) cities in the world. 7. The rivers in America are much (big) than those in England. 8. The island of Great Britain is (small) than Greenland.

9. What is the name of the (high) mountain in Asia? 10. The English Channel is (wide) than the Straits of Gibraltar. 11. Russia is a very (large) country.

Exercise 127.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. This man is (tall) than that one. 2. Asia is (large) than Australia. 3. The Volga is (short) than the Mississippi. 4. Which building is the (high) in Moscow? 5. Mary is a (good) student than Lucy. 6. The Alps are (high) than the Urals. 7. This garden is the (beautiful) in our town. 8. She speaks Italian (good) than English. 9. Is the word "newspaper" (long) than the word "book"? 10. The Thames is (short) than the Volga. 11. The Arctic Ocean is (cold) than the Indian Ocean. 12. Chinese is (difficult) than English. 13. Spanish is (easy) than German. 14. She is not so (busy) as I am. 15. It is as (cold) today as it was

yesterday. 16. She is not so (fond) of sports as my brother is. 17. Today the weather is (cold) than it was yesterday.

18. This book is (interesting) of all I have read this year. 19. January is the (cold) month of the year. 20. My sister speaks English (bad) than I do. 21. Which is the (hot) month of the year? 22. Which is the (beautiful) place in this part of the country? 23. This nice-looking girl is the (good) student in our group.

Exercise 128.

Open the brackets using the adjectives in the suitable form.

1. Oil is (light) than water. 2. We shall wait for a (dry) day to go on the excursion. 3. A bus is (fast) than a tram. 4. Take some of these sweets: they are very (nice). They are (nice) than the sweets in that box. 5. He clearly did not like the explanation, and as he listened to it, he became (angry) and (angry). 6. He worked (hard) and (hard) as the end of the term came nearer. 7. The (tall) trees in the world grow in California. 8. Please be (careful) next time and don't spill the milk again. 9. Bobby was a (quiet) child. He was (quiet) than his sister. 10. Her eyes are (grey) than mine. 11. He was the (fat) man in the village. 12. As he went on, the box became (heavy) and (heavy). 13. My sister is the (tall) girl in the class. 14. Who is the (attentive) student in your group? 15. It is autumn. Every day the air becomes (cold), the leaves (yellow). 16. This is the (beautiful) view I have ever seen in my life. 17. Your handwriting is now (good) than it was last year; but still it is not so (good) as Nick's handwriting. Nick has a (good) handwriting than you. And of course Nellie has the (good) handwriting of all.

Exercise 129.

Fill in the missing modal verbs:

1. You ... do out today. It's too cold. 2.... I take your fountain-pen? – Do, please. 3. We ... not carry the bookcase upstairs. It is too heavy. 4. When ... you come to see us? – I ... come only tomorrow. 5. Shall I write a letter to him? – No, you ..., it is not necessary. 6. Mary ... finish the work at once. 7.... you cut something without a knife? 8. Peter ... return the book to the library. We all want to read it. 9. Why ... not you understand it? It is so easy.

10.... we do the exercise at once? 11.... you pronounce this sound?

Exercise 130.

Fill in the missing modal verbs:

1. My sister can read English but she ... not read German. 2. Who ... recite this poem? 3.... I smoke here? – I am afraid not. 4.... I pay for these books at once? – No, you needn't. You ... pay for them in a day or two. 5. The lesson is over. We ... go home now. 6.... I take your dictionary? – Do, please. 7. Must we translate this article in class? – No, you ..., you'll do it at home. 8. You ... find our dean upstairs. 9.... I see your father's study? 10. Want king of furniture ... you see in the sitting-room? 11. You ... take a cold shower every morning. 12.... I come to see you tomorrow at ten o'clock? 13.... you do this translation in the morning? 14. I ... be at the Institute at eight. 15. It is dark. You ... draw the curtains.

Exercise 131.

Choose the proper word from brackets:

1. (Can, may) you play the piano? 2. (Can, may) Benny watch TV before going to bed? 3. I think I (can, may) do the work myself. 4. (Can, may) your friend speak English? 5. (Can, may) I have another cup of tea? 6. You (Can, may) stay a little longer if you like. 7. I (cannot, may not) hear you. Speak louder, please. 8. You (Can, may) take the book home. 9. (Can, may) I leave my bag with you? 10. I (cannot, may not) believe that.

Exercise 132.

Fill in the blanks with *can* or *may* in the correct form:

1. ... I visit you one of these days? 2. ... you lift this box? 3. When the fog lifted we ... see where we were. 4. She asked me if she ... use my dictionary. 5. The telephone is out of order. I ... not hear anything. 6. ... you help me a little? 7. ... I read the letter? 8. You ... think whatever you like. 9. I ... not walk so quickly. I have a weak heart. 10. You ... take the textbook. I don't need it any longer.

Exercise 133.

Fill in the blanks with *must not* or *need not*:

1. You ... ring the bell, I have a key. 2. "You ... play with matches," said Mother. 3. I ... go to the shops today. There is plenty of food in the house. 4. You ... strike a match; the room is full of gas. 5. We ... drive fast; we have plenty of time. 6. You ... drive fast; there is a speed limit here. 7. You ... turn on the light; I can see quite well. 8. You ... ask a woman her age. It's not polite.

Exercise 134.

Rewrite the following sentences using the words in brackets. Change the modal verb *can* (*could*) with the expression *to be able to* where it is possible.

1. I can give you my book for a couple of days (after I have read it). 2. He can ski (for ten years). 3. We knew that she could swim (since a child). 4. You cannot take part in this serious sport competition (until you have mastered good skills). 5. I could not solve the problem (before he explained it to me). 6. They can (never) appreciate your kindness. 7. I was sure you could translate that article (after you had translated so many texts on physics). 8. You can go to the country (when you have passed your last examination). 9. We can pass to the next exercise (when we have done this one).

Exercise 135.

Translate into Kazakh.

1. May I go to the post-office with Mike? 2. May I take Pete's bag? 3. Don't give the vase to the child: he may break it. 4. May we take notes with a pencil? 5. You may not cross the street when the light is red. 6. May I shut the door? 7. May I invite Nick to our house? 8. You may go now. 9. If you have done your homework, you may go for a walk. 10. Don't go to the wood alone:

you may lose your way. 11. It stopped raining, and mother told us that we might night go out. 12. May children play with scissors?

Exercise 136.

Insert the modal verb *may (might)* or the expression *to be allowed to*. Use *to be allowed to* only where *may (might)* can't be used.

1.... I bring my sister to the party? 2. He asked if he ... bring his sister to the party. 3. After they had finished their homework, the children ... watch TV. 4. He ... join the sports section as soon as he is through with his medical examination. 5. Becky's mother said that everybody ... take part in the picnic. 6. He ... go home if he likes. 7. As soon as the boy ... leave the room, he smiled a happy smile and ran out to join his friends outside. 8. The doctor says I am much better. I ... get up for a few hours every day.

Exercise 137.

Insert the modal verbs *may* or *can*.

1. I ... finish the work tomorrow if no one bothers me any more. 2. ... we come and see you next Sunday at three o'clock in the afternoon? 3. What time is it? – It ... be about six o'clock, but I am not sure. 4. Only a person who knows the language very well ... answer such a question. 5. ... I come in? 6. Let me look at your exercises. I ... be able to help you. 7. I ... not swim, because until this year the doctor did not allow me to be more than two minutes in the water. But this year he says I ... stay in for fifteen minutes if I like, so I am going to learn to swim.

8. Libraries are quite free, and any one who likes ... get books there. 9. I ... come and see you tomorrow if I have time. 10. Take your raincoat with you: it ... rain today. 11. Do you think you ... do that?

Exercise 138.

Insert the modal verbs *may* or *can*.

1. You ... come in when you have taken off your boots. 2. Be careful: you ... spill the milk if you carry it like that. 3. Most children ... slide on the ice very well. 4. I don't think I ... be here by eleven o'clock tomorrow, but I ... be. 5. ... you see anything in this inky darkness? 6. You ... go when you have finished your compositions. 7. What shall we do if the train is late? It ... be late, you know, after the terrible snowstorms we've had. 8. When ... you come and see me? – Let me see: I ... not come tomorrow, for I must be at the meeting, but on Sunday I'll find time. Yes, you ... expect me on Sunday about three o'clock. Will that be all right?

Exercise 139.

Insert the modal verbs *may (might)* or *can (could)*.

1. I use your pen? 2. ... I find a pen on that table? 3. You ... read this book: you know the language well enough. 4. You ... take this book: I don't need it. 5. ... I help you? 6. ... I ask you to help me? 7. ... you help me? 8. I ... not imagine her speaking in public: I knew that she was so shy. 9. Something was wrong with the car: he ... not start it. 10. A fool ... ask more questions than

a wise man ... answer. 11. She asked me if she ... use my telephone. 12. The school was silent: nothing ... be heard in the long dark corridors. 13. Waiting ... be endless, you know. 14. ... you tell me the nearest way to the city museum? 15. They ... think that I am too weak to take part in the excursion, but I am strong enough to do any kind of hard work, indeed. 16. He knew this period of history very well: he had read everything on the subject he ... find in the rich university library.

Exercise 140.

Insert the modal verbs *can, may or must*.

1. What ... we see on this map? 2. ... you speak Spanish? – No, unfortunately I 3. At what time ... you come to school? 4. ... I come in? 5. You ... not smoke here. 6. ... take your book? – I am afraid not: I need it. 7. He ... not speak English yet. 8. I have very little time: I ... go. 9. They ... not go to the park today because they are busy. 10. You ... read this text: it is easy enough.

Exercise 141.

Put the prepositions *on, it, into*.

1. Where is the book? – It is ... the table. 2. Where is the tea? – It is ... the cup. 3. Put the plates ... the table. 4. Put the book ... the bag. 5. There is a beautiful picture ... the wall. 6. He went ... the room. 7. I like to sit ... the sofa ... my room. 8. Mother is cooking dinner ... the kitchen. 9. She went ... the room and sat down ... the sofa. 10. There are many people ... the park today. 11. There is a girl standing ... the bridge. Why is she crying? – She has dropped her doll ... the water. 12. There is no tea ... my cup. 13. Pour some tea ... my cup. 14. Put these flowers ... the window-sill. 15. I saw many people ... the platform waiting for the train. 16. We went ... the garden and sat down ... a bench. 17. The teacher hung a picture ... the blackboard. 18. I opened the door and went ... the classroom. The teacher was writing some words ... the blackboard. The pupils were writing these words ... their exercise-books. There were some books and pens ... the teacher's table. There were two maps ... the wall and some flowers ... the window-sills. I saw a pen ... the floor. I picked it up and put it ... the table. 19. He put his hand ... his pocket, took out a letter and dropped it ... the mail-box which hung ... the wall of the house. Then he got ... his car and drove off.

Exercise 142.

Put the prepositions *it, to*.

1. We did not want to stay ... town on such a hot day, so we went ... the country. 2. It is very late. Go ... bed at once. 3. Where is your little sister? – She is ... bed. Mother always puts her ... bed at eight o'clock. 4. In summer my mother does not go ... work and I don't go ... school. We live ... the country. My father goes ... work every day, so he stays ... town. But sometimes he comes ... the country after work and goes back ... town early in the morning, when I am still ... bed. 5. In winter I usually go to ... bed at ten o'clock because

I learn ... school and have to get up early. But in summer, when I don't go ... school and live ... the country, I like to go ... bed late. 6. Do you like to read ... bed?

Exercise 143.

Put the prepositions *on, at*.

1. I get up ... seven o'clock or a ... quarter past seven. 2. ... Sunday I usually get up ... nine o'clock or half past nine. But last Sunday I slept very long and got up only ... noon. 3. Lev Tolstoy liked to get up ... sunrise. 4. Our lessons are usually over ... twenty minutes to two. 5. They returned from the wood ... sunset. 6. I began writing my composition ... seven o'clock and finished only ... midnight. 7. My birthday is ... the ninth of July. 8. The school year begins ... the first of September. 9. ... the twenty-fifth of December people celebrate Christmas. 10. ... Wednesday I usually have a lot of homework.

Exercise 144.

Put the prepositions *to, of*.

1. He bought a book ... English poems and gave it ... his sister. 2. I wrote ... him asking to send me a box ... chocolates. 3. The roof ... the house is very old. 4. There is a monument ... Pushkin in the Square ... Arts. 5. One wheel ... my car must be changed. 6. He was standing outside the door his house and explaining ... the mechanic what was wrong with his car. 7. He gave her a big bunch ... flowers. 8. I sent a letter ... my friend. 9. The streets ... St. Petersburg are straight. 10. Many pages ... this book are torn. 11. The young scientist was trying to prove ... the professor the necessity ... the experiment. 12. London is the capital ... Great Britain. 13. The embankments ... the Neva are faced with granite. 14. It is clear ... me that you don't know your lesson. 15. He was devoted ... his friend. 16. I explained ... the teacher that by the end ... the lesson I had not finished the translation ... the text and that's why I had not handed it ... him. The surprise ... the teacher was great. My explanation seemed strange ... the teacher.

Exercise 145.

Put the prepositions *with, by*.

1. The boy cut his finger ... a knife. 2. The boat was carried ... the waves into the open sea. 3. The teacher was pleased ... our work. 4. America was discovered ... Columbus. 5. "Hamlet" was written ... Shakespeare. 6. We eat soup ... a spoon. 7. He was killed ... a knife. 8. He was killed ... the robbers. 9. He was knocked down ... a big stick. 10. He was knocked down ... a car. 11. He was taken to hospital ... an ambulance. 12. He was treated ... very effective drugs. 13. He was cured ... a very skilful doctor. 14. He wrote his letter ... a pencil. 15. He was scolded ... his mother.

Exercise 146.

Put the prepositions, where necessary.

1. My mother is afraid ... rats. 2. "What do you complain ...?" asked the doctor. 3. Don't enter ... the room. 4. What are you laughing ...? 5. They did

not want to listen ... me. 6. Wait ... me. I'll be back ... a few minutes. 7. Yesterday the teacher spoke ... us about the architecture ... St. Petersburg. 8. My grandmother often complains ... headache. 9. I am sorry, I cannot speak ... you now, the professor is waiting ... me. I must go ... the institute and explain ... him some details ... our work. Come ... the evening, I shall listen ... you very attentively and answer ... all your questions. 10. ... nine o'clock the lecturer entered ... the hall, walked up ... the table, put his bag ... it, looked ... everybody and began his lecture. The lecture, as all the lectures ... this professor, was very interesting, and the students ... him with great attention. 11. Turn ... the corner ... the house and look ... the flowers grown ... my mother: aren't they beautiful? 12. He was an excellent pupil, and the teachers never complained ... him. 13. She complained ... feeling bad and could not answer ... the questions ... the teacher. 14. We tried to speak ... him, but he did not want to listen ... us. He did not even look ... us and did not answer ... our questions. 15. Your brother complains ... you. He says you always laugh ... him, never speak ... him and never answer ... his questions. 16. When I entered ... the room, everybody looked ... me with surprise: they had not waited ... me. 17. At the end ... the street she turned ... the corner, walked ... the bus-stop and began waiting ... the bus.

Exercise 147.

Put the prepositions *on, in* or *into*.

1. Where is the book? – It is ... the table. 2. Where is the tea? – It is ... the cup. 3. Put the plates ... the table. 4. Put the book ... the bag. 5. There is a beautiful picture ... the wall. 6. He went ... the room. 7. I like to sit ... the sofa ... my room. 8. Mother is cooking dinner ... the kitchen. 9. She went ... the room and sat down ... the sofa. 10. There are many people ... the park today. 11. There is a girl standing ... the bridge. Why is she crying? – She has dropped her doll ... the water. 12. There is no tea ... my cup. 13. Pour some tea ... my cup. 14. Put these flowers ... the window-sill. 15. I saw many people ... the platform waiting for the train. 16. We went ... the garden and sat down ... a bench. 17. The teacher hung a picture ... the blackboard. 18. I opened the door and went ... the classroom. The teacher was writing some words ... the blackboard. The pupils were writing these words ... their exercise-books. There were some books and pens ... the teacher's table. There were two maps ... the wall and some flowers ... the window-sills. I saw a pen ... the floor. I picked it up and put it ... the table. 19. He put his hand ... his pocket, took out a letter and dropped it ... the mail-box which hung ... the wall of the house. Then he got ... his car and drove off.

Exercise 148.

Put the prepositions *in* or *to*.

1. We did not want to stay ... town on such a hot day, so we went ... the country. 2. It is very late. Go ... bed at once. 3. Where is your little sister? – She is ... bed. Mother always puts her ... bed at eight o'clock. 4. In summer my

mother does not go ... work and I don't go ... school. We live ... the country. My father goes ... work every day, so he stays ... town. But sometimes he comes ... the country after work and goes back ... town early in the morning, when I am still ... bed. 5. In winter I usually go to ... bed at ten o'clock because I learn ... school and have to get up early. But in summer, when I don't go ... school and live ... the country, I like to go ... bed late. 6. Do you like to read ... bed?

Exercise 149.

Put the prepositions *at* or *on*.

1. I get up ... seven o'clock or a ... quarter past seven. 2. ... Sunday I usually get up ... nine o'clock or half past nine. But last Sunday I slept very long and got up only ... noon. 3. Lev Tolstoy liked to get up ... sunrise. 4. Our lessons are usually over ... twenty minutes to two. 5. They returned from the wood ... sunset. 6. I began writing my composition ... seven o'clock and finished only ... midnight. 7. My birthday is ... the ninth of July. 8. The school year begins ... the first of September. 9. ... the twenty-fifth of December people celebrate Christmas. 10. ... Wednesday I usually have a lot of homework.

Exercise 150.

Put the prepositions *to* or *of*.

1. He bought a book ... English poems and gave it ... his sister. 2. I wrote ... him asking to send me a box ... chocolates. 3. The roof ... the house is very old. 4. There is a monument ... Pushkin in the Square ... Arts. 5. One wheel ... my car must be changed. 6. He was standing outside the door his house and explaining ... the mechanic what was wrong with his car. 7. He gave her a big bunch ... flowers. 8. I sent a letter ... my friend. 9. The streets ... St. Petersburg are straight. 10. Many pages ... this book are torn. 11. The young scientist was trying to prove ... the professor the necessity ... the experiment. 12. London is the capital ... Great Britain. 13. The embankments ... the Neva are faced with granite. 14. It is clear ... me that you don't know your lesson. 15. He was devoted ... his friend. 16. I explained ... the teacher that by the end ... the lesson I had not finished the translation ... the text and that's why I had not handed it ... him. The surprise ... the teacher was great. My explanation seemed strange ... the teacher.

Exercise 151.

Put the prepositions *with* or *by*.

1. The boy cut his finger ... a knife. 2. The boat was carried ... the waves into the open sea. 3. The teacher was pleased ... our work. 4. America was discovered ... Columbus. 5. "Hamlet" was written ... Shakespeare. 6. We eat soup ... a spoon. 7. He was killed ... a knife. 8. He was killed ... the robbers. 9. He was knocked down ... a big stick. 10. He was knocked down ... a car. 11. He was taken to hospital ... an ambulance. 12. He was treated ... very effective drugs. 13. He was cured ... a very skilful doctor. 14. He wrote his letter ... a pencil. 15. He was scolded ... his mother.

Exercise 152.

Put the prepositions, where necessary.

1. My mother is afraid ... rats. 2. "What do you complain ...?" asked the doctor. 3. Don't enter ... the room. 4. What are you laughing ...? 5. They did not want to listen ... me. 6. Wait ... me. I'll be back ... a few minutes. 7. Yesterday the teacher spoke ... us about the architecture ... St.Petersburg. 8. My grandmother often complains ... headache. 9. I am sorry, I cannot speak ... you now, the professor is waiting ... me. I must go ... the institute and explain ... him some details ... our work. Come ... the evening, I shall listen ... you very attentively and answer ... all your questions. 10. ... nine o'clock the lecturer entered ... the hall, walked up ... the table, put his bag ... it, looked ... everybody and began his lecture. The lecture, as all the lectures ... this professor, was very interesting, and the students ... him with great attention. 11. Turn ... the corner ... the house and look ... the flowers grown ... my mother: aren't they beautiful? 12. He was an excellent pupil, and the teachers never complained ... him. 13. She complained ... feeling bad and could not answer ... the questions ... the teacher. 14. We tried to speak ... him, but he did not want to listen ... us. He did not even look ... us and did not answer ... our questions. 15. Your brother complains ... you. He says you always laugh ... him, never speak ... him and never answer ... his questions. 16. When I entered ... the room, everybody looked ... me with surprise: they had not waited ... me. 17. At the end ... the street she turned ... the corner, walked ... the bus-stop and began waiting ... the bus.

Exercise 153.

Put "to" before the infinitive:

1. He can speak German very well. 2. I am very glad see you. 3. She asked me ring him up and tell him about it. 4. This work must be done at once. 5. I am not sure that this work can be done in such a short time. 6. My son asked me let him go to the theatre. 7. Let me help you with your work. 8. I don't know what tell him. 9. We have come ask you about it. 10. I made him read this story. 11. I saw her leave the room. 12. I intend ring him up and Ask him about it. 13. You must make them Learn this rule. 14. Did you her ask the teacher about it? 15. We heard her come downstairs.

Exercise 154.

Put "to" before the infinitive where it is necessary:

1. I like ... play the guitar. 2. My brother can ... speak French. 3. We had ... put on our overcoats because it was cold. 4. They wanted ... cross the river. 5. It is high time for you ... go to bed. 6. May I ... use your telephone? 7. They heard the girl ... cry out with joy. 7. They heard the girl ... cry out with joy. 8. I would rather ... stay at home today. 9. He did not want ... play in the yard any more. 10. Would you like ... go to England? 11. You look tired. You had better ... go home. 12. I wanted ... speak to Nick, but could not ... find his telephone

number. 13. It is time ... get up. 14. Let me ... help you with your homework? 15. I was planning ... do a lot of things yesterday. 16. I'd like ... speak to you. 17. I think I shall be able ... solve this problem. 18. What makes you ... think you are right? 19. I shall do all I can ... help you. 20. I like ... dance. 21. I'd like ... dance. 22. She made me ... repeat my words several times. 23. I saw him ... enter the room. 24. She did not let her mother ... go away. 25. Do you like ... listen to good music? 26. Would you like ... listen to good music? 27. That funny scene made me ... laugh.

Exercise 155.

Change the pointed parts of the sentences with the infinitive construction.

E.g. The boy had many toys **which he could play with**.

The boy had many toys **to play with**.

1. I have no books **which I can read**. 2. Is there anybody **who will help you with your spelling**? 3. Don't forget that she has a baby **which she must take care of**. 4. Have you got nothing **that you want to say** on this subject? 5. There was nothing **that he could do** except go home. 6. I have only a few minutes **in which I can explain these words to you**. 7. I have an examination **which I must take soon**, so I can't go to the theatre with you. 8. King Lear decided to have a hundred knights **who would serve him** after he had divided up his kingdom. 9. Here is something **which will warm you up**. 10. Here is a new brush **which you will clean your teeth with**. 11. Here are some more facts **which will prove** that your theory is correct. 12. Here is something **which you can rub on your hands**. It will soften them. 13. Here are some screws **with which you can fasten the shelves to the wall**. 14. Here are some tablets **which will relieve your headache**. 15. Here are some articles **which must be translated for tomorrow**. 16. Who has a pen or a pencil to spare? I need something **I could write with**. 17. I have brought you a book **which you can read now**, but be sure and return it by Saturday. 18. Soon we found that there was another complicated problem **that we were to consider**. 19. The girl was quite young when both her parents died and she remained alone with two younger brothers **whom she had to take care of**.

Exercise 156.

Replace subordinate clauses by infinitive constructions.

E.g. He is **so old that he cannot skate**.

He is **too old to skate**.

1. The problem is **so difficult that it is impossible to solve it**. 2. The box is **so heavy that nobody can carry it**. 3. The baby is **so little that it cannot walk**. 4. He is **so weak that he cannot lift this weight**. 5. She is **so busy that she cannot talk with you**. 6. She was **so inattentive that she did not notice the mistake**. 7. The rule was **so difficult that they did not understand it**. 8. He was **so stupid that he did not see the joke**. 9. She has got **so fat that she cannot wear this dress now**. 10. The accident was **so terrible that I don't**

want to talk about it. 11. They were **so empty-headed that they could not learn a single thing.**

12. The window **was so dirty that they could not see through it.** 13. She was **so foolish that she could not understand my explanation.** 14. I have **very little wool: it won't make a sweater.**

Exercise 157.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the Perfect Infinitive.

1. I am awfully glad to have met you. 2. Sorry to have placed you in this disagreeable situation. 3. I am very happy to have had the pleasure of making your acquaintance. 4. I am sorry to have kept you waiting. 5. Clyde was awfully glad to have renewed his acquaintance with Sondra. 6. Sorry not to have noticed it. 7. I am sorry to have added some more trouble by what I have told you. 8. When Clyde looked at the girl closely, he remembered to have seen her in Sondra's company. 9. I remembered to have been moved by the scene I witnessed. 10. The child was happy to have been brought home. 11. Jane remembered to have been told a lot about Mr. Rochester. 12. The children were delighted to have been brought to the circus. 13. I am sorry to have forgotten to feed the rabbits.

Exercise 158.

Open the brackets using the infinitive in the suitable form.

1. He seems (to read) a lot. 2. He seems (to read) now. 3. He seems (to read) since morning. 4. He seems (to read) all the books in the library. 5. I want (to take) you to the concert. 6. I want (to take) to the concert by my father. 7. She hoped (to help) her friends. 6. She hoped (to help) by her friends. 9. I hope (to see) you soon. 10. We expect (to be) back in two days. 11. He expected (to help) by the teacher. 12. The children seem (to play) since morning. 13. I am glad (to do) all the homework yesterday. 14. She seems (to work) at this problem ever since she came here. 15. I am sorry (to break) your pen.

Exercise 159.

Put to before infinitive where it is necessary.

1. He can ... speak German very well. 2. I am very glad ... see you. 3. She asked me ... ring him up and ... tell him about it. 4. This work must ... be done at once. 5. I am not sure that this work can ... be done in such a short time. 6. My son asked me ... let him ... go to the theatre. 7. Let me ... help you with your work. 8. I don't know what ... tell him. 9. We have come ... ask you about it. 10. I made him ... read this story. 11. I saw her ... leave the room. 12. I intend ... ring him up and ... ask him about it. 13. You must ... make them ... learn this rule. 14. Did you hear her... ask the teacher about it? 15. We heard her ... come downstairs. 16. She watched the postman ... cross the street. 17. He was afraid ... ask her about it. 18. He wants ... stay here a little longer. 19. What do you intend ... do today?

Exercise 160.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. He didn't like to be sent there. 2. He wanted to be invited there. 3. He hoped to be appointed to this post. 4. She refused to be appointed to this post. 5. They were happy to be invited there. 6. He wanted to be offered this job. 7. She wants to be taught Latin. 8. They asked to be informed about it in time. 9. The children

Exercise 161.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. He got up to ask a question. 2. To master a foreign language in a short time you must work hard and systematically. 3. I stayed there to see what would happen. 4. To understand the importance of these events you should know all the facts. 5. I don't know him well enough to ask him for help. 6. It is too cold today to sleep with an open window. 7. He lay down to rest. 8. They always take a walk in the evening to sleep better. 9. It is warm enough to go for a walk without a coat. 10. To improve your pronunciation you must read aloud every day. 11. I've asked him to come to tell him this news. 12. To explain this problem he drew diagrams all over the blackboard. 13. To meet the increased demand for industrial goods, a great number of new shops have been opened in the towns and villages. 14. To economize on the freight we have decided to ship the first lot together with the second.

Exercise 162.

Read and translate the following sentences. Find the complex object and explain what it consists of.

1. I want you to listen to me and I expect you to understand me. 2. If you don't want anyone to know your business, keep your mouth shut. 3. What made you decide to enter that competition? 4. They wanted her to relax and sent the children to her aunt's. 5. Everybody knows him to be a responsible man. 6. Sunglasses always make you look mysterious. 7. The desire for success make Martin work hard. It doesn't let him rest a minute. 8. Let me take you to the Milky Way on your holiday! 9. It takes two to make a dream come true. 10. Don't let that fool you! 11. The boss expects you to finish the report by Monday. Would you like me to help you? 12. I don't let my children watch TV shows that are violent. Some of them will make your hair stand on end. 13. I saw you dancing, and I'll never be the same again! 14. We saw Megan cross the street and enter the supermarket. 15. I have never heard anyone to speak badly of him. 16. Angela feel her heart stop beating. 17. The detective watched people coming in and going out of the house in the middle of the night with great interest.

Exercise 163.

Rewrite the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: *He did it. They saw it. – They saw him do it.*

1. She said that. Everybody heard it. 2. The burglar got into the house. The neighbours noticed it. 3. The car disappeared in the tunnel. The policeman saw it. 4. The poet read some more of his poetry. The public made him do it. 5. Don't worry! You will go to the party. We'll let it. 6. Bill apologized. His father

told him to do it. 7. He is an expert in his sphere. They think so. 8. You will become my friend one day. I expect so. 9. He really said it. Mike heard it. 10. We shall go the party together. I would like that. 11. The car disappeared round the corner. The boys saw it. 12. Mary is the best girl in the world. Ted believed it. 13. Your kids often watch horror films before going to bed. You shouldn't let that. 14. It is a misunderstanding. I believe it. 15. You must tell me the truth. I want it.

Exercise 164.

Use *to* where it is necessary.

1. We expect everybody ... join us and ... have fun. 2. You can't make me ... do such things. 3. It would be foolish to let the child ... have his way. 4. We heard the postman ... come up to the front door and then we saw him ... slip a thick envelope into the box. 5. He got them ... rebuild the house. 6. The neighbour saw a stranger ... enter the house through the back door. 7. – What made you ... terrorize me? – I was made ... do it. 8. Why can't you let your son ... decide his future? 9. We don't want anyone ... interfere. 10. He noticed her suddenly ... turn pale. 11. Tracey had never expected Alan ... betray her. 12. I think this painting ... be a masterpiece. 13. Let him ... rest till he feels better. 14. She felt her shoes ... pinch. 15. I won't have you ... say it behind my back. 16. We suppose her ... be in her late fifties. 17. I have never seen anyone ... enjoy food so much.

Exercise 165.

Open the brackets using Infinitive or Participle I.

1. I watched the guests (leave), one by one. 2. She looked out of the window and saw the rain (pour) down on the leafless garden. 3. Suddenly they heard a key (turn) in the lock. They waited for somebody (appear). 4. After a short rest I felt strength (come) back to me. 5. Alexis looked back and saw a stranger (follow) her slowly. 6. I saw the glass (slip) from her hand and (fall) to the floor. 7. We felt it (come) for quite a long time. 8. When Helen returned to the hostel, she found her roommates (have) a surprise party. 9. The police saw the detective (stop) and (take) a few shots. 10. The parents watched their children (laugh, talk and enjoy) themselves on the beach. 11. I saw the unhappy young man (sit) on the bench with a miserable expression. 12. Everybody noticed the lawyer (give) a start and (turn) pale. 13. I felt as if I could feel her heart (beat). And then, suddenly, he heard her heart (stop) beating. 14. I can smell something (burn). 15. People saw robbers (wait) near the bank.

Exercise 166.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: *They saw him do it. – He was seen to do it.*

1. Everybody heard her say that. 2. The neighbours noticed the burglar get into the house. 3. The detective saw the fellow leave the bar. 4. The teacher made the pupil tell the truth. 5. Tom's parents allowed him to keep a dog. 6. People expect the performance to be a success. 7. Nobody ever heard him tell a

lie. 8. We know her to be a real professional. 9. We consider the situation hopeless. 10. Many people heard him promise a lot. 11. Somebody noticed her enter the night club. They let him choose his way of life.

Exercise 167.

Fill in the blanks with one of the following words: *burn, crawl, get, move, play, pull, switch on, tap, try, walk, come.*

1. We saw her ... the light and ... into the room. 2. I can feel something ... up my leg! 3. For a while they stood and watched the man ... trees. 4. He smelt something ..., so he rang the fire brigade. 5. We could definitely hear someone ... about downstairs. 6. We listened to the orchestra ... popular melodies. 7. I felt someone ... me on the shoulder, but when I turned round, there was no one there. 8. Look at that poor old lady ... to cross the busy street. 9. The policeman saw the man ... out of his car and ... out a gun.

Exercise 168.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the complex object.

1. He was said to be one of the most promising nuclear physicists. 2. He said to be a good translator. 3. Roberta was known to be an honest and hard-working girl. 4. Clyde was expected to arrive at the week-end. 5. Becky and Tom were supposed to have stayed at the window Dougla's. 6. The number of the unemployed is reported to be increasing with every year. 7. Many new textbooks are expected to be published soon. 8. The Moscow Underground is said to be the finest in the world. 9. Chernyshevsky is known to have spoken several foreign languages. 10. A hare is known to run very fast. 11. The man was seen to take off his coat. 12. The diamond content of the mines in Western Yakutta is said to be in no way inferior to that of the world-famous South African mines. 13. That power station is known to be situated on the Angara River. 14. These devices are considered to be very effective. 15. Many books are known to be published in our country every year. 16. You are supposed to graduate in four years. 17. Radium is said to be very radioactive. 18. This device was known to have been designed in that laboratory. 19. His invention is considered to be of great importance. 20. The sun is known to represent a mass of compressed gases. 21. The new rocket is reported to go into operation next year. 22. This type of rocket is supposed to have many advantages. 23. For a long time the atom was thought to be indivisible. 24/ The helium atom was found to have two electrons. 25. I did not know what I was expected to say to that, so I said nothing.

Exercise 169.

Rewrite the following sentences using complex subject.

E.g. We *heard* that *a car stopped* outside the door.

A car was heard to stop outside the door.

It is believed that the poem was written by Byron.

The poem is believed to have been written by Byron.

1. We know Bernard Shaw to have been a very witty man. 2. People consider the climate there to be very healthful. 3. It was announced that the Chinese dancers were arriving next week. 4. It is expected that the performance will be a success. 5. It is said that the book is popular with both old and young. 6. It is believed that the poem was written by an unknown soldier. 7. It is supposed that the playwright is working at a new comedy. 8. It is reported that the flood has caused much damage to the crops. 9. It was supposed that the crops would be rich that year. 10. It has been found that this mineral water is very good for the liver. 11. Scientists consider that electricity exists throughout space. 12. It is said that the weather in Europe was exceedingly hot last summer. 13. It is said that this man was very handsome in his youth. 14. It was reported that five ships were missing after the battle.

Exercise 170.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the complex subject.

1. Irving turned out to be a long, pale-faced fellow. 2. His office turned out to be in one of the back streets. 3. He appeared to be an ideal man. 4. She doesn't seem to want to do anything I suggest. 5. He turned out to have no feeling whatever for his nephew. 6. This appeared to amuse the policeman. 7. You can easily get in through the window if the door happens to be locked. 8. The peasants did not seem to see her. 9. The Gadfly seemed to have taken a dislike to Signora Grassini from the time of their first meeting. 10. You don't seem to have done any great thing to yourself by going away. 11. "Jim", "he said at last, in a voice that did not seem to belong to him. 12. Money just doesn't happen to interest me. 13. In the middle of the lecture Dr. Sommerville happened to pause and look out of the window. 14. From the very first mention of Long John, I was afraid that he might turn out to be the very one-legged sailor whom I had watched for so long at the inn. 15. Clyde seemed to have been thinking of no one else but Sondra since their last meeting. 16. Clyde appeared to have forgotten of his promise to spend his spare evenings with Roberta. 17. She appeared to be an excellent actress. 18. One day a Hare happened to meet a Tortoise. 19. The Tortoise seemed to be moving very slowly. 20. The Hare turned out to be the loser of the race. 21. The apparatus seemed to be in excellent condition. 22. You appear to have found in him something that I have missed. 23. This work seems to take much time. 24. The operation seemed to be a complicated one. 25. The new methods of work appear to be very effective. 26. The percentage of carbon in this steel turned out to be low.

Exercise 171.

Rewrite the following sentences using complex subject.

E.g. *It appeared that **they had lost** the way.*

***They appeared to have lost** the way.*

1. It seems they know all about it. 2. It seems they have heard all about it. 3. It seemed that the discussion was coming to an end. 4. It seems that you don't approve of the idea. 5. It seemed that the house had not been lived in for a long

time. 6. It appeared that he was losing patience. 7. It appeared that he had not heard what had been said. 8. It happened that I was present at the opening session. 9. It so happened that I overheard their conversation. 10. It turned out that my prediction was correct. 11. It turned out that the language of the article was quite easy.

Exercise 172.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the word combinations to be likely to, to be sure to.

1. Mr. Worthing is sure to be back soon. 2. These two young people are sure to be very good friends. 3. You are sure to be there tomorrow night, aren't you? 4. We most of us want a good many things that we are not likely to get. 5. He is sure to tell me all about this even if I don't ask him. 6. When Sondra said that they were sure to meet again, she saw Clyde's face suddenly brighten. 7. If we go on arguing, we are sure to quarrel. 8. They are sure to acknowledge your talent. 9. He is sure to give us some useful information. 10. The article is likely to appear in the next issue of the journal. 11. She is not likely to change her opinion. 12. They were sure to come to an understanding. 13. Don't worry: everything is sure to turn out all right. 14. This new course of treatment is sure to help your grandmother.

Exercise 173.

Read, translate and define if the sentences are simple, compound or complex.

1. I love English. 2. It is a very beautiful language. 3. When I think about you, I feel happy. 4. Come in and we shall have a nice chat. 5. Robert had a cup of milk and went to bed. 6. If you have a strong cough, put a spoon of honey in your tea. 7. The room was warm and comfortable. 8. She is the person who cares for me. 9. There was no moon and the sky was black. 10. She was sure that when she grew up she would become a pop-singer. 11. It was raining heavily though the wind had died down. 12. Make a cup of tea for us while I'm laying the table. 13. Shall we see you again after you come back from London? 14. I have loved you ever since I saw you first. 15. Ted looks unhappy because he got a bad mark.

Exercise 174.

Read and translate the following sentences. Define the type of the sentences.

1. Life is full of surprise. 2. Don't answer back! Do as I tell you! 3. Can I have a Mars bar, Dad? 4. She blew him a kiss and went away. 5. I've just had an absolutely brilliant idea. 6. Is there anything interesting on TV tonight?

7. Karate is an art form which comes from the mysterious East. 8. Don't you recognize me, darling? 9. My friends never let me down. 10. She is not pleased with her new dress. 11. – John is late for class again. – What a shame! 12. You have never flown by Concorde, have you? 13. It's healthy to get up early with the sun. 14. I had such a delicious big supper last night. 15. Shall we

go for a walk? 16. I don't like spicy food. 17. The inspector didn't trust the young man.

Exercise 175.

Define what parts of speech are the subjects in the following sentences.

1. Alison lives next door to us. 2. He and I are business partners. 3. Something is wrong with the computer again! It must be a virus. 4. It's bitter cold today. 5. The Wilsons are redecorating their house. 6. To help you is my pleasure. 7. Walking is a good way to avoid stress. 8. The unemployment demand more job vacancies. 9. Seven is considered to be a lucky number. 10. Being is love is wonderful! 11. The homeless dream of a warm house. 12. Yours was the best project. 13. Your ifs and buts always irritate me! 14. There is an orange in the vase. 15. There is no news today. 16. There are a lot of new words in this text.

Exercise 176.

Find the subject in the following sentences.

1. In a dark, dark wood, there was a dark, dark house. And in that dark, dark house, there was a dark, dark room. And in that dark, dark room there was a dark, dark cupboard. And in that dark, dark cupboard, there was a dark, dark shelf. And in that dark, dark shelf, there was a dark, dark box. And in that dark, dark box, there was a dark, dark **ghost**. 2. It is impossible to make any decision. 3. It doesn't matter, believe me. 4. It rains a lot here in the summer. 5. It's the fifth of April today. 6. It's foggy outside and it's raining.

Exercise 177.

Define the type of the predicate in the following sentences.

1. They gave a wonderful show last night. 2. The concert was fantastic! 3. Amanda is very diligent. 4. She takes her studies seriously. 5. Frederick is an honest person. 6. Can you talk to me honestly just for once? 7. It was a lucky chance. 8. All ended luckily. 9. – He has worked hard all his life. – Yes, he really is a hard worker. 10. You must think hard about what I am offering you. 11. She hardly knows what to do with her children. 12. I'm so tired that I can hardly move. 13. Give it a hard push when you try to open the door. 14. Chris would like to buy a fast car. 15. News travels pretty fast. 16. We had a late lunch at a hotel. 17. I started learning English quite late in life. 18. I have made good progress in my studies lately. 19. Have you heard of him lately? 20. As we took an early train, we arrived in London quite early.

Exercise 178.

Define the meaning of linking verbs in the following sentences.

1. It is a good question. 2. It seems like a good questions. 3. It grew dark suddenly. 4. Our climate is getting warmer and warmer. 5. My brother became an expert in his field. 6. You look terrific today! 7. I am feeling lonely, everybody has left me. 8. The stranger looked suspicious to the children. 9. Robin turned pale. 10. The book proved interesting. 11. The people kept silent.

12. The weather remained fine all through the autumn. 13. Susan appears quite ignorant about it. 14. The child is so cute. 15. The strawberries are fresh and they taste delicious.

Exercise 179.

Find objects in the following sentences and say if they are direct or indirect.

1. Buy me an ice-cream. 2. Are you going to explain it to me? 3. Dictate this rule to the students, please. 4. Show me the new computer. 5. Look at the map. 6. I've never seen a ghost. – Have you? 7. I want to be with you. 8. Call me tonight. 9. I shall never forget you. 10. Nina is married to my cousin. 11. I've been thinking of you! 12. Peter will not tell her about his adventure. 13. The secretary gave the mail to the boss. 14. I've never translated from Spanish into English. 15. Barbara parked the car near the shopping-centre. 16. I'd like to introduce you to my friends. 17. Listen to your heart!

Exercise 180.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: Give this disk to Victor this disk.

1. Show your new passport to the inspector. 2. Send a Christmas card to your grandparents. 3. Pass the ketchup to Dad. 4. Don't lend any money to Vladimir. He never gives it back. 5. Take the telegram and pass it to Henry. 6. He has two small daughters and he often gives presents to them. 7. I need your car badly. Can you lend it to me? 8. Mr. Parker gave a master class to his students. 9. Describe this picture to me. 10. She taught Latin to my son. 11. Tell your new telephone number to the secretary. 12. Sing this wonderful song to us, Maria. 13. You will have to pay the money to them here and now. 14. Would you get a beer for me? 15. Let me make some coffee for you, girls.

Exercise 181.

Find the attribute in the following sentences and say what parts of speech they are.

1. It was a small cosy room. 2. It happened on a December night. 3. I like Jessica's earrings. 4. Did you see his new scooter? 5. Have you got any new ideas? 6. It's miserable weather today, isn't it? 7. The streets of Moscow have become very beautiful lately. 8. I saw a girl dancing in the hall and I fell in love with her. 9. The rising sun made everything look beautiful. 10. The house built by my grandfather is made of wood. 11. The scared child couldn't say a word. 12. On the second day of our trip there was a strange incident. 13. She has a talent to tell people's future. 14. I hope to have a chance of traveling around the world one day. 15. He has a bright post-card of a London double-decker. 16. The photo which is standing on the piano was taken some twenty years for money. 18. Tina was wearing a dress that was too tight on her.

Exercise 182.

Find adverbial modifiers in the following sentences, define their meanings and say what parts of speech they are.

1. Don't go out alone in the middle of the night. 2. Our teacher speaks English perfectly. 3. My relatives live in the country all the year round. 4. I like your new shoes very much. 5. He was very much surprised at hearing it. 6. I've missed you a lot! Where have you been all this time? 7. They went there with a heavy heart. 8. The stranger spoke in an easy friendly manner. 9. She is as pretty as a calendar picture. 10. – Did you come to work by car this morning? – No, on foot. He works at the laboratory hard from morning till night. 12. After waiting for a few moments impatiently, he left angrily. 13. What a shame we have our birthday once a year! 14. They stood side by side looking tenderly at the playing children. 15. Though he was tired he started working at once.

Exercise 183.

Change complex sentences into simple sentences with the Subjective Infinitive construction and translate into Kazakh.

1. It is said that he knows several oriental languages. 2. It is reported that the expedition left on the 1st June. 3. It is known that he has a large collection of pictures. 4. It was reported that the ship had arrived in Batumi. 5. It was considered that he is one of the pilots in our country. 6. It is said that he was appointed director of a big factory. 7. It is expected that the agreement will be signed in the near future. 8. It is believed that they are on their way to Moscow. 9. It is expected that the wheat crop will be very good. 10. It is known that these vegetables are grown in the north. 11. It is considered that he is the best engineer at our factory. 12. It is believed that the results of the experiment are very good. 13. It is expected that the weather will improve.

Exercise 184.

Change complex sentences into simple sentences with the Subjective Infinitive construction and translate into Kazakh.

1. It seems that that he knows English well. 2. It seems that this book is very interesting. 3. It appears that he knows her very well. 4. It seems that she has forgotten her promise. 5. It appears that they understood this rule very well. 6. It appears that she likes her work very much. 7. It appears that she graduated from the University last year. 8. It seemed that he was surprised when I said it. 9. It appeared that he was pleased with our work. 10. It seems that this house was built by a good architect. 11. It seems that he is the best engineer at our plant. 13. It seemed that she was a very experienced teacher. 13. It seemed that this problem was very difficult.

Exercise 185.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. He is said to have written a very good play. 2. The expedition is reported to have returned to Leningrad. 3. The negotiations are said to have been completed. 4. The captain is not likely to allow them to put these cases on desk. 5. Nobody appears to have taken any notice of his words. 6. This is unlikely to happen. 7. Lomonosov is known to have been the greatest scientist of his time. 8. This work is expected to be done in a few days. 9. The negotiations are likely

to continue till Saturday. 10. He appears to have lost her address. 11. This agreement is likely to be concluded in the near future. 12. He seemed to be a very intelligent man. 13. He is believed to be one of the best specialists in heart diseases. 14. He seems to have read to be one of subject. 15. She doesn't appear to like music. 16. He doesn't seem to know anything about it. 17. He didn't seem to be surprised by this news. 18. He doesn't appear to understand the importance of this invention. 19. He is unlikely to make any mistakes in his dictation. 20. He appears to have some interesting ideas on this question.

Exercise 186.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the Gerund:

1. Have you finished writing? 2. Taking a cold shower in the morning is very useful. 3. I like skiing, but my sister prefers skating. 4. She likes sitting in the sun. 5. It looks like raining. 6. My watch wants repairing. 7. Thank you for coming. 8. I had no hope of getting an answer before the end of the month. 9. I had the pleasure of dancing with her the whole evening. 10. Let's go boating. 11. He talked without stopping. 12. Some people can walk all day without feeling tired. 13. Living in little stuffy rooms means breathing poisonous air. 14. Iron is found digging in the earth. 15. There are two ways of getting sugar: one from beet and the other from sugar-cane. 16. Jane Eyre was fond of reading. 17. Miss Trotwood was in the habit of asking Mr. Dick his opinion.

Exercise 187.

Change the following objective clauses with the gerund with the preposition "of"

E.g. She thought **she would go to the country** for the week-end.

She thought **of going to the country** for the week-end.

1. I thought **I would come and see you tomorrow**. 2. I am thinking **that I shall go out to the country tomorrow to see my mother**. 3. What do you think you will do tomorrow? 4. I don't know now; I thought **I would go to the zoo**, but the weather is so bad that probably I shan't go. 5. I hear there some English books at our institute book-stall now. – So you are thinking **that you will buy some**, aren't you? 6. I thought **I would work in the library this evening**, but as you have come, I won't go to the library.

Exercise 188.

Change the following objective clauses with the gerund with the preposition "after"

E.g. **When she had bought** everything she needed, she went home.

After bying everything she needed, she went home.

1. **After I had hesitated some minutes whether** to buy the hat or not, I finally decided that I might find one I liked better in another shop. 2. **When she had graduated from the university**, she left St. Petersburg and went to teach in her home town. 3. **When he had proved that his theory was correct**, he started studying ways and means of improving the conditions of work in very deep coalmines. 4. **After she took the child to the kindergarten**, she went to the

library to study for her examination. 5. **When he had made a thorough study of the subject**, he found that it was a great deal more important than he had thought at first.

Exercise 189.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to the different forms of Gerund:

1. Watching football matches may be exciting enough, but of course it is more exciting enough, but of course it is more exciting playing football. 2. She stopped coming to see us, and I wondered what had happened to her. 3. Can you remember having seen the man before? 4. She was terrified of having to speak to anybody, and even more, of being spoken to. 5. He was on the point of leaving the club, as the porter stopped him. 6. After being corrected by the teacher, the students' papers were returned to them. 7. I wondered at my mother's having allowed the journey. 8. I understand perfectly your wishing to start the work at once. 9. Everybody will discuss the event, there is no preventing it. 10. At last he broke the silence by inviting everybody to walk into the dining-room. 11. On being told the news she turned pale. 12. The place is worth visiting.

Exercise 190.

Translate into Kazakh paying attention to Gerund:

1. I avoided speaking to them about that matter. 2. She burst out crying. 3. They burst out laughing. 4. She denied having been at home that evening. 5. He enjoyed talking of the pleasure of travelling. 6. Excuse my leaving you at such a moment. 7. Please forgive my interfering. 8. He gave up smoking a few years ago. 9. They went on talking. 10. He keeps insisting on my going to the south. 11. Oh please do stop laughing at him. 12. Do you mind my asking you a difficult question? 13. Would you mind coming again in a day or two? 14. I don't mind wearing this dress. 15. She could not help smiling. 16. I cannot put off doing this translation. 17. Though David was tired, he went on walking in the direction of Dover.

Exercise 191.

Open the brackets using Gerund in the Active and Passive Voices.

1. Why do you avoid (to speak) to me? 2. She tried to avoid (to speak) to. 3. The doctor insisted on (to send) the sick man to hospital. 4. The child insisted on (to send) home at once. 5. Do you mind him (to examine) by a heart specialist? 6. He showed no sign of (to recognize) me. 7. She showed no sign of (to surprise). 8. He had a strange habit of (to interfere) in other people's business. 9. I was angry at (to interrupt) every other moment. 10. He was always ready for (to help) people. 11. He was very glad of (to help) in his difficulty. 12. On (to allow) to leave the room the children immediately ran out into the yard and began (to play). 13. In (to make) this experiment they came across some very interesting phenomena. 14. The results of the experiment must be checked and re-checked before (to publish). 15. David was tired of (to scold) all the time. 16. The watch requires (to repair). 17. The problem is not worth (to discuss). 18. Jane Eyre remembered (to lock) up in the red room for (to contradict) Mrs. Reed.

Exercise 192.

Open the brackets using the suitable form of the Gerund.

1. Excuse me for (to break) your beautiful vase. 2. You never mentioned (to be) to Greece. 3. She was proud of (to award) the cup of a champion. 4. I don't remember ever (to meet) your sister. 5. I don't remember (to ask) this question by anybody. 6. The cat was punished for (to break) the cup. 7. The cat was afraid of (to punish) and hid itself under the sofa. 8. The machine needs (to clean). 9. I am quite serious in (to say) that I don't want to go abroad. 10. He seemed sorry for (to be) inattentive to his child. 11. She confessed to (to forget) to send the letter. 12. The old man could not stand (to tell) what he should do. 13. Going to the party was no use: he had no talent for (to dance). 14. The Bronze Horseman is worth (to see). 15. After thoroughly (to examine) the student, the professor gave him a satisfactory mark. 16. After thoroughly (to examine) by the examination commission, the student was given a satisfactory mark. 17. She accused him (to steal) her purse. 18. She reproached me for (not to write) to her. 19. This job is not worth (to take). 20. After (to look) through and (to mark) the student's papers, the teacher handed them back. 21. After (to look) through and (to mark), the papers were handed back to the students. 22. These clothes want (to wash). 23. David was very glad of (to find) his aunt.

Exercise 193.

Open the brackets using Gerund in the Active and Passive Voices.

1. Why do you avoid (to speak) to me? 2. She tried to avoid (to speak) to. 3. The doctor insisted on (to send) the sick man to hospital. 4. The child insisted on (to send) home at once. 5. Do you mind him (to examine) by a heart specialist? 6. He showed no sign of (to recognize) me. 7. She showed no sign of (to surprise). 8. He had a strange habit of (to interfere) in other people's business. 9. I was angry at (to interrupt) every other moment. 10. He was always ready for (to help) people. 11. He was very glad of (to help) in his difficulty. 12. On (to allow) to leave the room the children immediately ran out into the yard and began (to play). 13. In (to make) this experiment they came across some very interesting phenomena. 14. The results of the experiment must be checked and re-checked before (to publish). 15. David was tired of (to scold) all the time. 16. The watch requires (to repair). 17. The problem is not worth (to discuss). 18. Jane Eyre remembered (to lock) up in the red room for (to contradict) Mrs. Reed.

Exercise 194.

Open the brackets using the suitable form of the Gerund.

1. Excuse me for (to break) your beautiful vase. 2. You never mentioned (to be) to Greece. 3. She was proud of (to award) the cup of a champion. 4. I don't remember ever (to meet) your sister. 5. I don't remember (to ask) this question by anybody. 6. The cat was punished for (to break) the cup. 7. The cat was afraid of (to punish) and hid itself under the sofa. 8. The machine needs (to clean). 9. I am quite serious in (to say) that I don't want to go abroad. 10. He

seemed sorry for (to be) inattentive to his child. 11. She confessed to (to forget) to send the letter. 12. The old man could not stand (to tell) what he should do. 13. Going to the party was no use: he had no talent for (to dance). 14. The Bronze Horseman is worth (to see). 15. After thoroughly (to examine) the student, the professor gave him a satisfactory mark. 16. After thoroughly (to examine) by the examination commission, the student was given a satisfactory mark. 17. She accused him (to steal) her purse. 18. She reproached me for (not to write) to her. 19. This job is not worth (to take). 20. After (to look) through and (to mark) the student's papers, the teacher handed them back. 21. After (to look) through and (to mark), the papers were handed back to the students. 22. These clothes want (to wash). 23. David was very glad of (to find) his aunt.

Exercise 195.

Complete the following sentences using gerund.

1 He bought a good knife for 2. I thanked him for 3. He went home instead of 4. I'll speak to her before 5. He left the room with out ... 6. He went to the factory after 7. He had much difficulty in 8. I insist on 9. He bought some books instead of 10. After ... he went to bed. 11. I'll call on him before 12. He rang me up before

Exercise 196.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. He objects to spending his summer vacation in the south. 2. He objects to Helen's spending her summer vacation in the south. 3. He has some hope of going there in the autumn. 4. He has some hope of his daughter's going there in the autumn. 5. I insist on going there at once. 6. I insist on your going there at once. 7. I have no objections to spending the summer on the Volga. 8. I have no objections to my children's spending the summer on the Volga. 9. She is proud of being Professor A's pupil. 10. She is proud of her son's being Professor A's pupil.

Exercise 197.

Define the function of the gerunds in the following sentences.

1. On entering the room he greeted everybody. 2. I am fond of skating. 3. I don't remember seeing him before. 4. Skiing is very pleasant. 5. I've finished reading this book. 6. You can improve your knowledge of English by reading more. 7. He succeeded in finishing his work in time.

Exercise 198.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. He has a strange habit of drinking strong tea in the evening. 2. Is there any hope of getting this information tonight? 3. There is no hope of our getting a letter from him soon. 4. There is very little hope of the goods being received before the 1st June. 5. We have no possibility of getting a ticket for this play tonight. 6. There is no hope of the goods being shipped tomorrow. 7. He has a strange way of speaking to children. 8. He has no objection(s) to subscribing to this magazine. 9. They have no objections(s) to Comrade A's being sent there.

10. He gave me a good idea of using this material for my article. 11. I have no objection(s) to their coming here. 12. There are different ways of solving this problem. 13. There is some hope of his life being saved. 14. There are many ways of making him do it.

Exercise 199.

Change the adverbial clauses of cause with the participle construction.

1. **As he now felt more at ease**, the man spoke in a louder voice. 2. **Since he knew who the man was**, Robert was very pleased to have the chance of talking to him. 3. **As he thought that it was his brother at the window**, Steve decided to open it. 4. **As the people were afraid of falling into a ditch in the darkness at any moment**, they felt their way about very carefully. 5. **Since he needed a shelter for the night**, Peter decided to go to the neighbours' house.

Exercise 200.

Choose the suitable form of the participle given in brackets.

1. a) The girl (writing, written) on the blackboard is our best pupil.
b) Everything (writing, written) here is quite right.
2. a) The house (surrounding, surrounded) by tall trees is very beautiful.
b) The wall (surrounding, surrounded) the house was very high.
3. a) Who is that boy (doing, done) his homework at that table?
b) The exercise (doing, done) by the pupils were easy.
4. a) The girl (washing, washed) the floor is my sister.
b) The floor (washing, washed) by Helen looked very clean.
5. a) We listened to the girls (singing, sung) Russian folk songs.
b) We listened to the Russian folk songs (singing, sung) by the girls.
6. Do you know the girl (playing, played) in the garden?
7. The book (writing, written) by this scientist is very interesting.
8. Translate the words (writing, written) on the blackboard.
9. We could not see the sun (covering, covered) by dark clouds.
10. The (losing, lost) book was found at last.
11. (Going, gone) along the street, I met Mary and Ann.
12. Read the (translating, translated) sentences once more.
13. Name some places (visiting, visited) by you last year.
14. I picked up the pencil (lying, lain) on the floor.
15. She was reading the book (buying, bought) the day before.
16. Yesterday we were at a conference (organizing, organized) by the pupils of the 10th form.
17. (Taking, taken) the girl by the hand, she led her across the street.
18. It was not easy to find the (losing, lost) stamp.
19. I shall show you a picture (painting, painted) by Hogarth.
20. Here is the letter (receiving, received) by me yesterday.
21. Look at the beautiful flowers (gathering, gathered) by the children.

22. His hat (blowing, blown) off by the wind was lying in the middle of the street.

23. "How do you like the film?" he asked, (turning, turned) towards me.

24. When we came nearer, we saw two boys (coming, come) towards us.

25. I think that the boy (standing, stood) there is his brother.

Exercise 201.

Open the brackets using the verbs in in the Present Participle or Perfect Participle.

1.(to do) his homework, he was thinking hard. 2. (to do) his homework, he went for a walk. 3. (to sell) fruit, he looked back from time to time, hopping to see his friends. 4. (to sell) all the fruit, he went to see his friends. 5. (to eat) all the potatoes, she drank a cup of tea. 6. (to drink) tea, she scalded her lips. 7. (to run) in the yard, I fell and hurt my knee. 8. (to look) through some magazines, I came across an interesting article about UFOs. 9. (to write) out and (to learn) all the new words, he was able to translate the text easily. 10. (to live) in the south of our country, he cannot enjoy the beauty of St.Petersburg's White Nights in summer. 11. (to talk) to her neighbour in the street, she did not notice how a thief stole her money. 12. (to read) the story, she closed the book and put it on the shelf. 13. (to buy) some juice and cakes, we went home. 14. (to sit) near the fire, he felt very warm.

Exercise 202.

Open the brackets using the suitable forms of the participle.

1. (to translate) by a good specialist, the story preserved all the sparkling humour of the original. 2. (to approve) by the critics, the young author's story was accepted by a thick magazine. 3. (to wait) for some time in the hall, he was invited into the drawing-room. 4. (to wait) in the hall, he thought over the problem he was planning to discuss with the old lady. 5. They reached the oasis at last, (to walk) across the endless desert the whole day. 6. (to lie) down on the soft couch, the exhausted child fell asleep at once. 7. She went to work, (to leave) the child with the nurse. 8. (to phone) the agency, he left (to say) he would be back in two hours. 9. (to write) in very bad handwriting, the letter was difficult to read. 10. (to write) his first book, he could not help worrying about the reaction of the critics. 11. (to spend) twenty years abroad, he was happy to be coming home. 12. (to be) so far away from home, he still felt himself part of the family. 13. She looked at the enormous bunch of roses with a happy smile, never (to give) such a wonderful present. 14. (not to wish) to discuss that difficult and painful problem, he changed the conversation.

Exercise 203.

Change the attributive clauses with the participle construction.

1.All the people **who live in this house** are students. 2. The woman **who is speaking now** is our secretary. 3. The apparatus **that stands on the table** in the corner of the laboratory is quite new. 4. The young man **who helps the professor** in his experiments studies at an evening school for laboratory

workers. 5. People **who take books from the library** must return them in time. 6. There are many pupils in our class **who take part in all kinds of extra-curricular activities**.

Exercise 204.

Change the adverbial clauses of time with the participle construction. (don't miss the conjunction *when*).

1. **When you speak English**, pay attention to the order of words. 2. Be careful **when you are crossing a street**. 3. **When you are leaving the room**, don't forget to switch off the light. 4. **When you begin to work with the dictionary**, don't forget my instructions. 5. **When they were traveling in Central Africa**, the explorers met many wild animals. 6. **When you are copying English texts**, pay attention to the articles. 7. You must have much practice **when you are learning to speak a foreign language**.

Exercise 205.

Translate into English paying attention to the Past Participle.

1. My sister likes boiled eggs. 2. We stopped before a shut door. 3. Tied to the tree, the goat could not run away. 4. They saw overturned tables and chairs and pieces of broken glass all over the room. 5. This is a church built many years ago. 6. The books written by Dickens give us a realistic picture of the 19th century England. 7. She put a plate of fried fish in front of me. 8. The coat bought last year is too small for me now. 9. Nobody saw the things kept in that box.

Exercise 206.

Change the pointed part of the sentence with the participle construction. Change the construction of the sentence where it is necessary

1. **When he arrived at the railway station**, he bought a ticket, walked to the platform and boarded the train. 2. **As he was promised help**, he felt quieter. 3. **After he was shown in**, he was told to take off his coat and wait for a while. 4. Robinson **started the building of the house at once** and finished it before the season of rains set in. 5. **He poured out a cup of coffee**, sat down in an arm-chair and looked at the woman **who was sitting opposite him**. 6. **When he had left the house and was crossing the street**, he suddenly stopped as he remembered that he had forgotten to phone his friend. 7. He looked at me and hesitated: **he did not know what to say**. 8. **As he had long lived in those parts and knew the place very well**, he easily found his way to the market-place. 9. He has no language problems, **because he has been studying English for a long time**. 10. **After I had written this exercise**, I began to doubt whether it was correct. 11. Take care **when you cross the street**. 12. Students should always be attentive **while they are listening to the lecturer**. 13. There are many students **who study music**. 14. Don't you feel tired **after you have walked so much?**

Exercise 207.

Write down Present and Past Participle.

To take, to write, to open, to stop, to copy, to play, to forget, to close, to begin, to order, to study, to buy, to develop to cut, to sit, to make, to permit, to refer, to travel, to lie.

Exercise 208.

Translate into Kazakh language:

Receiving, received; finishing, finished; buying, bought; opening, opened; sending, sent; exporting, exported; doing, done; promising, promised; losing, lost; reading, read; showing, shown; translating, translated; giving, given; closing, closed; forgetting, forgotten; killing, killed; bringing, brought; selling, sold; preparing, prepared; concluding, concluded; signing, signed;

Discussing, asked, answering, closed, waiting, standing, signed, reaching, showing, telling, selling, getting up, coping, discussed, repeating, asking, sitting, reached, building, copied, told, sold, comparing, packing, answered, closing, built, manufactured, signing, manufacturing, breaking, shown, listening, taking, part, lost, studying, leaving, seeing, understanding, answering, repeated, counting.

Exercise 209.

Replace participle constructions by the subordinate clauses.

1. He went home, having looked through all the letters received that day. 2. Having collected all the material, he was able to write his article. 3. Having arranged everything, he went home by the 10.30 train. 4. Having lost his friend's address, he couldn't send him a telegram. 5. Having read a lot of books on this question, he was able to make a very interesting report. 6. Having worked in the garden the whole day, he felt very tired. 7. Having slept a few hours, he felt well again. 8. Having studied the question in detail, he was able to answer all the questions asked by the professor. 9. Having found out that he was still in Moscow, I rang him up. 10. Not having received an answer from him he decided to write to him once more. 11. Having found out that the next train would leave only at seven o'clock in the evening, I decided to go by the morning train. 12. Having learned English well at the Institute of Foreign Languages, she could speak without difficulty to the members of the British workers' delegation. 13. He left the room having switched off the light. 14. Having fulfilled his task, he returned home. 15. Having thrown the ball into the water, the boy could not get it back.

Exercise 210.

Define the forms and the functions of the Participles.

1. All the workers taking part in this work must be at the factory at 8 o'clock in the morning. 2. Having a lot of time, I decided to walk to the station. 3. While crossing the bridge, I met my brother. 4. Being very tired, I went straight home. 5. Being very angry with him, I didn't want to talk to him. 6. While going up the hill, he fell and hurt himself. 7. He took all the letters and telegrams lying on the table and went to the manager's office. 8. The answer received from the factory greatly surprised them. 9. While going home, I saw

Helen talking to somebody. 10. Thinking that Comrade P. was busy, we didn't ring him up. 11. Being a very experienced worker, he was able to do this work in a work. 12. Yesterday he showed me the list of books and magazines received by our library. 13. While waiting for a tram, I saw Comrade D. 14. The stories published in this magazine are very interesting. 15. We have already received all the machines ordered at this plant. 16. The teacher took home all the composition written by his pupils. 17. She lay on the sofa reading a book. 18. He gave the letters to the secretary asking her to send them off at once. 19. There are very interesting figures illustrating the development of our radio industry. 20. She wrote him a friendly letter thanking him for his help. 21. The boys stood on the bank throwing stones into the river. 22. He said this looking her angrily. 23. Not knowing what to do, she applied to us for advice. 24. He sat at the table looking through the correspondence received the day before. 25. They sat in silence looking at the setting sun.

Exercise 212.

Find the right place of the adverbs given in brackets.

1.The teacher comes to class at 8.30 (always). 2.These children are on time for class (always). 3. I will remember you (always). 4. She is sleeping (probably). 5.They have finished their work (finally). 6.Do you eat breakfast (always)? 7. Anastasia knows what to say (hardly ever). 8.The mail comes at noon (usually). 9.The fax is here by evening (usually). 10.The post will be here soon (probably). 11.Ann stays home in the evenings (often). 12.Ann is at home on Saturday evening (often). 13.Ann will stay home tonight (probably). 14.Steve wrote me a letter (finally). 15.The semester is over (finally). 15.The semester is over (finally). 16.I have finished my essay (finally). 17.Do you study at the library (usually)? 18.Is the teacher absent (ever)? 19.What did you say (just)? 20.What time do you eat lunch (generally)? 21.Do you feel homesick (sometimes)? 22.My daughter stays overnight with our relatives (occasionally).

Exercise 213.

Give the degrees of comparison of the following adverbs.

1. fast; 2. hard; 3. late; 4. slowly; 5. carefully; 6. clearly; 7. fluently; 8. regularly; 9. intensively; 10. well; 11. badly; 12. far; 13. much; 14. little.

Exercise 214.

Choose the necessary word.

1.There is a lake in the forest.We were touched by their invitation. (deep,deeply) 2.He managed the task Matt did ... work.(good, well). 3. The boxer was hit very We ... know what to do next. (hard, hardly). 4. We are sisters and we are ... to each other. The inspector examined the papers (close, closely). 5. Such equipment is ... used in all clinics. This shop has a ... choice of goods. (wide, widely). 6. My mother lives quite ... me. Hurry up, it's ... midnight. (near, nearly). 7. Will you come home ... today? Have you bought anything new ... ? (late, lately). 8. –The dress is ... decorated with ribbons. – Yes, and it is ... expensive. (pretty, prettily). 9. The prisoner

tried ... to escape but failed. Mel has ... recovered from the shock. (hard, hardly). 10. Do you feel ... today? I feel ... about my latest progress. (good, well). 11. She was ... hurt and was taken to hospital. It certainly was ... news to her family. (bad, badly).

Exercise 215.

Translate into English paying attention to the adverbs.

1. Испандықтар өте тез сөйлейді. 2. Ол жылдам жүгіреді, себебі ол спортсмен. 3. Үйге кеш келме. 4. Қатты жаңбыр жауып тұр. 5. Жаңалықтарды мұқият тыңда. 6. Менің әйелім шамалы тамақ пісіреді, бірақ жақсы өлең айтады. 7. Сіздің не айтып тұрғаныңызды мен жақсы түсінемін. 8. Жолды мұқият кесіп өт. 9. Алфавитті білсең, сен бұл сөзді оңай оқисың. 10. Ол терең демалды, себебі ол жылдам жүгірді. 11. Күн жарқырап тұр, аспанда жайлап бұлттар көшіп жатыр. 12. Тез ойла, асықпай сөйле. 13. Туристер вокзалға тым ерте келді. 14. Кейде әйелдер машинаны өте мұқият емес жүргізеді. 15. Кенет инспектор не болғанын түсінді. 16. Ол балерина және өте әдемі қозғалады. 17. Ақпанда қатты қар жауады. 18. Иван Николаевич әрдайым қатты сөйлейді. Ол мектеп директоры. 19. – Томас көп саяхаттайды ма? – Ия ол тілші. 20. – Сен оны жақсы танысың ба? – Жоқ мен оны нашар танымаймын.

Exercise 216.

Say if the underlined words are adjectives or adverbs.

1. It is early spring. 2. He gets up early. 3. He took a fast train to Odessa. 4. He walked very fast. 5. Most newspapers come out daily. 6. This is a daily newspaper. 7. He returned from a long journey. 8. Did he stay here long? 9. They have very little time. 10. She eats very little. 11. She reads very much. 12. He drew a straight line. 13. He went straight down the street. 14. Vladivostok is in the Far East. 15. They didn't walk far yesterday. 16. This year he works more and better than last year. 17. I have more books than you. 18. He has a better voice than his sister. 19. You would write better if you had a better pen.

Exercise 217.

Choose the suitable word given in brackets.

1. The question is quite (simple, simply). 2. She explained it quite (simple, simply). 3. They lived (happy, happily). 4. The children were (happy, happily). 5. She spoke to him (cold, coldly). 6. Her hands were (cold, coldly). 7. He wrote his dictation (bad, badly). 8. This story isn't (bad, badly). 9. This is a (comfortable, comfortably) arm- chair. 10. He travelled (comfortable, comfortably). 11. He spoke (quiet, quietly). 12. His voice was (quite, quietly). 13. Do you (serious, seriously) want to go there? 14. It is a very (serious, seriously) thing. 15. He didn't write his dictation (good, well). 16. She can speak English (good, well). 17. The work was done (perfect, perfectly). 18. She is quite (helpless, helplessly). 19. She looked at them (helpless, helplessly). 20. He is very (brave, bravely). 21. He acted (brave, bravely). 22. His answer was quite (clear, clearly). 23. These figures (clear, clearly) show the development of

industry . 25. I don't know the (exact, exactly) time of their arrival. 26. I don't know (exact, exactly) time of their arrival. 27. He looked at me (sad, sadly). 28. It is (sad, sadly) that he is still ill.

Exercise 218.

Rewrite the sentences and put the adverbs in places.

1. I get letters from my father (often). 2. He will come (to-morrow, here). 3. Have you seen him (yet)? 4. The postman has come (just). 5. Have you heard it (ever)? 6. I write to him (often), but he answers my letters (seldom). 7. He goes to bed at eleven o'clock (usually). 8. He told me about it (often, before). 9. I have been there (never). 10. It is ten o'clock (already). 11. Have you finished your work (yet)? 12. She is working in the garden (still). 13. We see them (seldom). 14. He meets them (often). 15. He has returned (just). 16. Have you seen this film (ever)? 17. He gets up so late (never). 18. He will come to Moscow (soon). 19. They are in Leningrad (still). 20. You must go there alone (never). 21. She can get interesting books from the library (always). 23. She can see them (often). 24. You must ask him about it (never). 27. The letter has been sent off (just).

Exercise 219.

Rewrite the sentences and put the adverbs in places.

1. He was able to carry his suit – case (hardly). 2. I agree with you (quite). 3. Have you money to buy this radio – set (enough)? 4. She is not clever to understand it (enough). 5. It is dark (quiet). 6. Your child sleeps in the afternoon (too little). 7. She always reads in summer (very much). 8. I am angry with you (not at all). 9. He is strong to do this work (enough)/ 11. I forgot to tell him about it (nearly). 12. It is cold to go a walk (too).

Exercise 220.

Rewrite the sentences and put the adverbs in places.

1. He answered my question (coldly). 2. He works (very well). 3. He played yesterday (badly). 4. The sun is shining to-day (brightly). 5. He translated this text at the examination (very quickly). 6. The teacher speaks at the lesson (slowly). 7. He ran down the road (very fast). 8. He read the story to the end (slowly). 9. He spoke at the lesson (very loudly). 10. He wrote the dictation at the examination (badly). 11. They lived for a long time (happily).

Exercise 221.

Rewrite the sentences and put the adverbs in places.

1. The weather will change (evidently). 2. He will finish his work in time (probably). 3. He will agree to your offer (certainly). 4. They are at home now (possibly). 5. He went to Riga last night (perhaps). 6. All the parties came to an agreement (finally). 7. They will spend their vacation on the Volga (probably). 8. This book is the best in my library (certainly). 9. I found him at his office (fortunately). 10. There was nobody at home (unfortunately). 11. This question is of great importance (politically). 12. He was disappointed (naturally). 13. It will rain perhaps). 14. They will take the first place in the tournament (probably).

Exercise 222.

Form the adverbs in the Comparative and Suprelative forms.

1. She works (hard) than you. 2. Peter ran (fast) than Henry. 3. He answered at the examination (good) than you. 4. I got up (early) than my brother. 5. Which of all the boys ran (fast) at the contest? 6. Which of all the students in your group speaks English (good)? 7. Can you see the ship (clearly) than before? 8. Why didn't you tell me (early) about it? 9. He knows English, French and German, but he speaks German (good). 10. Pleasant work (hard) in summer and in autumn. 11. He lives (far) than I. 12. You did your (carefully) than he.

Exercise 223.

Put the sentences in interrogative and negative form.

1.It's summer now. 2.It was five o'clock when I got home. 3.It's light in here. 4.It's be over soon.

Exercise 224.

Put the sentences in Past and Future Indefinite Tense.

1.It's cold today, isn't it? 2.It isn't late, is it? 3.It's dark here. 4.It's eight o'clock, isn't it? 5.Is it warm there? 6.Is it cold? 7.Is it cold there at this time of year, or is it warm? It isn't dark yet. 9.It isn't too late to ring him up yet.

Exercise 225.

Put the sentences in interrogative and negative form.

a).1. It's always cold in January. 2.It was simple to translate that letter. 3.It was warm yesterday. 4.It'll be interesting for you to read this book. 5.It'll be easy to find the railway station. 6.It's difficult for him to read this text.

b). 1.It rains in autumn. 2.It rained all day long yesterday. 3.It's raining now. 4.It was raining at five o'clock yesterday. 5.It snows in October. 6.It'll be raining very often soon. 7.It's going to rain.

Exercise 226.

Put the sentences in Past and Future Indefinite Tense.

1.It's easy to understand this text, isn't it? 2.It's interesting to listening to your stories. 3.Is it difficult for you to learn grammar rules? 4.It's dark in the room, isn't it? 5.It doesn't often snow here in winter.6.It doesn't rain here very often at this time of year. 7.It's important for me to finish the work today.

Exercise 227.

Define the subject in the following sentences.

1.Kiev is one the oldest towns in our country. 2.She went out of the room. 3.somebody is waiting for you. 4.The postman delivers us newspapers early in the morning. 5.Who has come? 6.To skate is very pleasant. 7.Reading is her favourite occupation. 8."Well is an adverb. 9."Free on board" is an expression which used in contracts.

Exercise 228.

Translate into Kazahk language:

1.It is hot to-day 2.It is 20 kilometres to Moscow. 3.It is easy to get up early in summer. 4.Please give me the dictationary; it is on the shelf. 5.What do you think about it? 6.It will probably snow to-morrow. 7.It is rather warm to-day. Why is the window closed? Open it. 8.This sentence is very long. It is difficult to understand it. 9.It is strange that you don't want to go to his lecture.It will be very interesting. 10.It is very late now. 11.It is necessary to help them. 12.It was a warm spring day. 13.It is ten o'clock. 14.It is useless asking him to do it. 15.My pen is bad, I can't use it. 16.I can't drink my tea. It is too hot. 17.It is clear that they will not finish their work in time. 18.It is expected that they will return soon. 19.It is one kilometer from our house to the river.

Exercise 229.

Define the subject in the following sentences.

1. Kiev is one of the oldest towns in our country. 2. She went out of the room. 3. Somebody is waiting for you. 4. The postman delivers us newspapers early in the morning. 5. Who has come? 6. To skate is very pleasant. 7. Reading is her favourite occupation. 8. "Well" is an adverb. 9. "Free on board" is an expression which is often used in contracts.

Exercise 230.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. It is hot today. 2. It is 20 kilometers to Moscow. 3. It is easy to get up early in summer. 4. Please give me the dictionary, it is one of the shelf. 5. What do you think about it? 6. It will probably snow tomorrow. 7. It is rather warm today. Why is the window closed? Open it. 8. This sentence is very long. It is difficult to understand it. 9. It is strange that you don't want to go to his lecture. It will be very interesting. 10. It is very late now. 11. It is necessary to help them. 12. It was a warm spring day. 13. It is ten o'clock. 14. It is useless asking him to do it. 15. My pen is bad, I can't use it. 16. I can't drink my tea. It is too hot. 17. It is clear that they will not finish their work in time. 18. It is expected that they will not finish their work in time. 18. It is one kilometer from our house to the river.

Exercise 231.

Define If the predicate in the following sentences is simple, compound subject or compound verb.

1.He went home after the lecture. 2.They are doctors. 3.She has received a letter from her father. 4.We can do this work in a short time. 5.He was ill yesterday. 6.He must post the the letter at once. 7.The day was fine yesterday. 8. I have to get up early now. 9.Yhe room was in disorder. 10.His article will be published in the newspaper. 11.This must be done to-morrow. 12.His task is to collect all the material for his report. 13.This pen is mine. 14.We are to meet at the station at nine o'clock.

Exercise 232.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. Our plan is to spend our summer vacation in the mountains. 2. I was to wait for him till seven o'clock. 3. His desire is to travel around the Kazakh in the summer. 4. The agent's duty was to deliver the goods by the 1st of June. 5. The seller was to deliver the goods by 1st of June. 6. My intention is to take my examination on Monday. 7. He is to take his examination on Monday. 8. We are to go there on the 1st of July. 9. The proposal was to begin the negotiations at once. 10. They were to begin the negotiations immediately.

Exercise 233.

Define If the predicate in the following sentences is simple, compound subject or compound verb.

1. He went home after the lecture. 2. They are doctors. 3. She has received a letter from her father. 4. We can do this work in a short time. 5. He was ill yesterday. 6. He must post the letter at once. 7. The day was fine yesterday. 8. I have to get up early now. 9. The room was in disorder. 10. His article will be published in the newspaper. 11. This must be done tomorrow. 12. His task is to collect all the material for his report. 13. This pen is mine. 14. We are to meet at the station at nine o'clock.

Exercise 234.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. Our plan is to spend our summer vacation in the mountains. 2. I was to wait for him till seven o'clock. 3. His desire is to travel around the Soviet Union in the summer. 4. The seller was to deliver the goods by the first of June. 5. My intention is to take my exams on Monday. 7. we are to go there on the 1st of July. 8. The proposal was to begin the negotiations at once. 9. They were to begin the negotiations immediately.

Exercise 235.

Define the attribute in the following sentences

1. He received a long letter from his school friend. 2. Peter's library is very good. 3. It was a cold day. 4. There are two broken chairs in this room. 5. The second chapter is very interesting. 6. He picked up the letter lying on the floor. 7. The roof of the house is red. 8. There is no hope of seeing his soon.

Exercise 236.

Define the adverbial modifiers in the following sentences:

1. We reached the town in the morning. 2. I called on him to ask him about our examination. 3. He has greatly changed. 4. We could not see the river from the hill top. 5. The ship could not leave the port owing to the storm. 6. He sat on the sofa reading. 7. He carefully read the letter before signing it. 8. He likes to walk fast.

Exercise 237.

Write down the following sentences in interrogative and negative forms.

1. There is a television-set in his room. 2. There are some pictures in this book. 3. There is a post-office in our street. 4. There was a meeting at our office

yesterday. 5. There will be a lecture in our club tonight. 6. There were some children in the park yesterday.

Exercise 238.

Write down the following sentences in negative forms.

1. They are working in the garden. 2. He works at the factory. 3. He will be at home tonight. 4. The lecture began at 12 o'clock. 5. She can do it tomorrow. 6. You must go there tonight. 7. The examination was difficult. 8. He has a dog. 9. He will be invited there. 10. He has returned to Moscow. 11. She will be asked about it. 12. They had done it by 58 o'clock.

Exercise 239.

Write down the following sentences in interrogative and negative forms and answer them in affirmative and negative forms.

1. He knows her address. 2. The barometer began to fall. 3. The lecture will be over at 2 o'clock. 4. She must post this letter. 5. You can go now. 6. She has been sitting here since morning. 7. Everything will be done tomorrow. 8. They are working in the garden. 9. He has left Moscow. 10. She returned the books to the library.

Exercise 240.

Write down the following sentences in interrogative and negative forms.

1. He knows French. 2. He spent his holidays on the Black Sea. 3. He has returned to Moscow. 4. She is working hard at English. 5. He will be able to do it by the 1st of April. 6. The weather is fine today. 7. They were glad to see you. 8. You can help me. 9. You came by train. 10. He must go there at once. 11. She could speak English last year.

Exercise 241.

Put general questions to the following sentences.

1. I live in a big city. 2. We are students. 3. She can play chess very well. 4. He knows a lot of people in the city. 5. Tom has an interesting job. 6. He has a lovely time in the country every weekend. 7. It is interesting for me to study English. 8. It's getting cold outside. 9. I shall help you, don't worry. 10. I have spoken to the chief. 11. Winter has come. 12. I enjoyed my holiday greatly. 13. I had a bath an hour ago. 14. I am deeply interested in this matter. 15. They got married last December.

Exercise 242.

Put special questions to the following sentences using given words and word combinations.

1. I got up early this morning . (What time ...?)
2. She lives rather far from here. (How far ...?)
3. It's interesting work. (What kind of ...?)
4. My friends live in America . (Where ...?)
5. I am going to visit you next week. (When ...?)
6. Sam is going to relax. (What...?)

7. Can you give me some money? (How much...?)
8. I was born in 1980. (When ...?)
9. Something strange happened yesterday. (What...?)
10. The film is too boring. (What kind of...?)
11. I am a theatre-goer. (What...?)
12. She has a lot of books in her library. (Where...?)
13. Russia and Canada are big countries. (What kind of ...?)
14. There is some money in the box. (What ...?)
15. Somebody phoned you. (Who...?)

Exercise 243.

Put alternative questions to the following sentences.

1. There are ten students in my group.
2. Mario wants to become a singer.
3. It's already dark outside.
4. Betty can play the piano.
5. My mother is my best friend.
6. She will get this information tomorrow.
7. Kate's father is a tall man.
8. We met two years ago.
9. They have been here for an hour already.
10. The partners must give the answer now.
11. My brother has a large family.
12. Students have to be hard-working.
13. My little son has to be very careful with his keys.
14. My granny is sixty years old.
15. I'd like a glass of cola.

Exercise 244.

Put disjunctive questions to the following sentences.

- A.** 1. You are Marina Serebrova, ...? 2. He isn't a student, ...? 3. She lives in York, ...? 4. You have a big family, ...? 5. They have lunch at one o'clock, ...? 6. My father has to drive to his office, ...? 7. He doesn't have to get up too early, ...? 8. German isn't difficult, ...? 9. There is a lot of light in this hall, ...? 10. There are no stars in the sky, ...? 11. Ted didn't come to class yesterday, ...? 12. Our teacher gave us much homework to do, ...? 13. You didn't have to lie to her, ...? 14. It snows a lot in Siberia, ...? 15. It never rains in the Gobi, ...? 16. Those are your gloves, ...? 17. I am a fool, ...? 18. We haven't met before, ...? 19. He has never been to Jamaica, ...? 20. The Browns will never sell their house, ...?

- B.** 1. He can cook well, ...? 2. You can't buy happiness, ...? 3. Rob must keep his word, ...? 4. You mustn't smoke here, ...? 5. Let's start working, ...? 6. Let's no argue, ...? 7. Make him take his words back, ...? 8. Don't shout at me, ...? 9. Nothing ever happens to me, ...? 10. Everything depends on the situation, ...? 11. Everyone will be present at the conference, ...? 12. Nobody has ever thought about it, ...? 13. Something should be done to help them, ...? 14. I used to live in the street, ...? 15. He never used to drink coffee, ...? 16. We need a new washing-machine, ...? 17. You needn't worry about it, ...? 18. Everyone is informed about it, ...? 19. Nobody phoned me today, ...? 20. No one agrees with him, ...?

Exercise 245.

Put special questions in the following sentences.

1. I got up early this morning. (What time ...?)

2. She lives rather far from here. (How far ...?)
3. It's interesting work. (What kind of ...?)
4. My friends live in America. (Where ...?)
5. I am going to visit you next week. (When ...?)
6. Sam is going to relax today. (What ...?)
7. Can you give me some money? (How much ...?)
8. I was born in 1980. (When ...?)
9. Something strange happened yesterday. (What ...?)
10. The film is too boring. (What kind of ...?)
11. I am a theatre-goer. (What ...?)
12. She has a lot of books in her library. (Where ...?)
13. Russia and Canada are big countries. (What kind of ...?)
14. There is some money in the box. (What ...?)
15. Somebody phoned you. (Who ...?)

Exercise 246.

Put questions to the given words according to the pattern.

Pattern: 1. *She visits a dancing school.* – Who visits a dancing school? What does she visit? 2. *Mike is waiting for his friend.* – Who is waiting for his friend? Who is Mike waiting for?

1. **Nick** saw **an accident**. 2. **Sandra** married **John**. 3. **He** reads a lot of **newspapers**. 4. **She** is talking to **the guide**. 5. **Fleur** sells **flowers**. 6. **Tom** thought about his **problem**. 7. **I** am going to **order** pizza. 8. **The children** visited **the Zoo** on Sunday. 9. **They** have passed **the interview**. 10. There are bright **stars** in the sky. 11. **I** don't like to play **tennis**. 12. **She** is looking at **the sea**. 13. **The house** needs **painting**. 14. **Bobby** is looking for **a job**. 15. **He** can't translate **this fax**.

Exercise 247.

Put alternative questions to the following sentences.

1. There are ten students in my group. 2. Mario wants to become a singer. 3. It's already dark outside. 4. Betty can play the piano. 5. My mother is my best friend. 6. She will get this information tomorrow. 7. Kate's father is a tall man. 8. We met two years ago. 9. They have been here for an hour already. 10. The parents must give the answer now. 11. My brother has a large family. 12. Students have to be hard-working. 13. My little son has to be very careful with his keys. 14. My granny is sixty years old. 15. I'd like a glass of cola.

Exercise 248.

Choose from the right column disjunctive questions.

- | | |
|---|---------------|
| 1. You usually start your work
at nine o'clock | a. can she? |
| 2. Tamara can't speak
any foreign language, | b. do they? |
| 3. He hasn't got a pet, | c. has she? |
| 4. You can always trust me, | d. don't you? |
| | e. aren't I? |
| | f. will you? |

- | | |
|--|------------------|
| 5. They never argue with me, | g. Did they? |
| 6. Helen didn't come to the party, | h. weren't they? |
| 7. We are going to see the ocean tomorrow, | i. shall we? |
| you? | j. Will (would) |
| 8. You haven't been to the Bolshoi before, | k. could it? |
| 9. He isn't lazy, | l. will she? |
| 10. Pamela won't date Jack, | m. aren't we? |
| 11. I am lucky, | n. can't you? |
| 12. Pay attention, | o. did she? |
| 13. Don't be late, | p. is he? |
| 14. Nobody called for me, | q. have you? |
| 15. Everyone was very happy, | |
| 16. Nothing could be better, | |
| 17. Let's start, | |

Exercise 249.

Put disjunctive questions to the following sentences.

A. 1. You are Marina Serebrova, ...? 2. He isn't a student, ...? 3. She lives in York, ...? 4. You have a big family, ...? 5. They have lunch at one o'clock, ...? 6. My father has to drive to his office, ...? 7. He doesn't have to get up too early, ...? 8. German isn't difficult, ...? 9. There is a lot of light in this hall, ...? 10. There are no stars in the sky, ...? 11. Ted didn't come to class yesterday, ...? 12. Our teacher gave us much homework to do, ...? 13. You didn't have to lie to her, ...? 14. It snows a lot on Siberia, ...? 15. It never rains in the Gobi, ...? 16. Those are your gloves, ...? 17. I am a fool, ...? 18. We haven't met before, ...? 19. He has never been to Jamaica, ...? 20. The Browns will never sell their house, ...?

B. 1. He can cook well, ...? 2. You can't buy happiness, ...? 3. Rob must keep his word, ...? 4. You mustn't smoke here, ...? 5. Let's start working, ...? 6. Let's not argue, ...? 7. Make him take his words back, ...? 8. Don't shout at me, ...? 9. Nothing ever happens to me, ...? 10. Everything depends on the situation, ...? 11. Everyone will be present at the conference, ...? 12. Nobody has ever thought about it, ...? 13. Something should be done to help them, ...? 14. I used to live in the street, ...? 15. He never used to drink coffee, ...? 16. We need a new washing-machine, ...? 17. You needn't worry about it, ...? 18. Everyone is informed about it, ...? 19. Nobody phoned me today, ...? 20. No one agrees with him, ...?

Exercise 250.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: *She says, "I have to go." – She says (that) she has to go.*

1. Tom says, "I am always late for classes." 2. Father says, "My watch is slow." 3. The detective says, "There is something strange about this person." 4.

The sign says, "There is no parking here." 5. Mum says, "It's time to have lunch." 6. The teacher says, "Sit down, please." 7. The weatherman says, "It will be icy tomorrow." 8. The boy says, "I can ride a motor-bike." 9. The policeman says, "Be careful, don't walk alone in the night." 10. The Prime Minister says, "I promise everything will be all right soon." 11. She says, "I am leaving tomorrow." 12. The son says to his parents, "I've never been in the circus." 13. The doctor says to his patient, "Go to bed not later than ten o'clock in the evening." 14. She says, "I am having tea now." 15. Hue and Liz say, "We met two days ago." 16. My dentist says, "Sweets are harmful for your teeth." 17. "Don't worry," he says. "If someone calls, I'll let you know." 18. "Don't make noise, children," says our teacher. 19. "I can't do it without your help," says Roman. 20. "Type this letter urgently," the chief says. 21. The top-model says, "There is nothing better than a good sleep."

Exercise 251.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: *He asks, "Are you ready to go out?" – He asks if I am ready to go out.*

1. The stranger asks, "Is anybody at home?" 2. They ask, "Is it cold today?" 3. The teacher asks, "Do you have any questions?" 4. Mario asks us, "Has Maria come?" 5. The boss asks, "Do you agree with me?" 6. She asks, "Is this film worth seeing?" 7. The student asks, "Shall I start reading?" 8. Everybody asks, "Do you have an extra ticket?" 9. The waiter asks, "Would you like some cheese?" 10. Sarah asks, "Do I have to say 'Yes'?" 11. The policeman asks, "Has anything happened?" 12. I am asked, "Were you born in spring or in autumn?" 13. He asks, "Am I right or not?" 14. Richard asks, "Are you going to Charles's wedding next Saturday?" 15. I am often asked at the airport, "Have you got a travelling insurance?" 16. She asks me, "Can you understand what he means?" 17. When I come home in the evening, my parents ask me, "Did you have a good time?" 18. The manager asks the clerk, "Have all the documents been signed?"

Exercise 252.

Change the following sentences according to the pattern.

Pattern: *He asks, "Where has she gone?" – He asks where she has gone.*

1. I ask them, "Who is the director of this film?" 2. They ask, "What happened last week?" 3. Sam asks, "Who told you this?" 4. The passer-by asks, "Where is the nearest café?" 5. She asks, "How much does this coat cost?" 6. My students ask, "How long does it take you to study English?" 7. Grandpa asks, "What have they just said on the radio?" 8. She asks, "Whose clothes are these?" 9. Mr. Snow asks, "Who am I talking to?" 10. Everybody asks, "When will the party begin?" 11. They ask us, "How often does it snow in the Caucasus?" 12. My daughter asks me, "Who invented a bicycle?" 13. He asks, "What is on TV tonight?" 14. She asks, "How much shampoo is there in the

bottle?" 15. My mother asks me, "What tea do you prefer?" 16. We ask the tourists, "Have you been to Russia before?"

Exercise 253.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. Why they didn't reach an agreement last year is not clear to anyone. 2. Whether the expedition will start this month is uncertain. 3. Whether they can come to an understanding is doubtful. 4. What he wants to do is to help us. 5. That they will be late for the aeroplane is quite possible. 6. That he has made such a mistake is very strange. 7. Whether he really wants to help us is not clear to me. 8. That there will be many obstacles on his way is doubtless. 9. What he really thought of it was unknown to anybody. 10. Whether there will be a ship for Batumi to-morrow is unknown. 11. It is surprising that the matter has taken such a turn. 12. It is evident that the dispute will be settled in the near future. 13. It is not clear whether there will be any improvement in their relations. 14. It is uncertain whether they will accept our terms. 15. It is probable that he will refuse to go there.

Exercise 254.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. The question is whether it will be possible to render them help at once. 2. The trouble is that I can't get the necessary material for my report. 3. The difficulty was that they couldn't get tickets for that day. 4. The question was whether they would arrive in time to take part in this work. 5. The doctor's advice was that my brother should spend the autumn in the Crimea. 6. The question is whether they will be able to find a suitable steamer for the transportation of these goods. 7. The difficulty is that there have been no steamers for Batumi for the last three days owing to a severe storm on the Black Sea. 8. That is what he used to tell us after his lectures. 9. The question we have to decide now is whether anything can be done to help him. 10. That was why nobody liked his lecture. 11. The question was how they could deliver the goods in such a short time. 12. The trouble is that none of us know anything about this subject. 13. The difficulty was that he had lost his passport.

Exercise 255.

Change the direct speech into indirect speech.

1. He has just said, "I will do it at once". 2. He said to me, "I sent Comrade A a telegram yesterday." 3. He said, "The story is not interesting". 4. I said to them, "I shall be back in half an hour." 5. She said to me, "I met your brother in Sochi last year." 6. He said, "I have never been to the Caucasus." 7. She said to me, "I can't go there now but I shall probably be able to go there to-morrow." 8. She said, "I think that the weather will change soon." 9. He said to me, "I shall let you know as soon as the manager comes." 10. He said, "It is getting dark". 11. He said, "I shall try to learn the story by heart." 12. She said, "The train starts at 10 o'clock in the evening." 14. She said, "I can't stay here any longer." 15. He said to her, "I shall come as soon as I can."

Exercise 256.**Change the direct speech into indirect speech.**

1.He has just asked me,"Has the postman come?" 2.She asked him, "Have you ever been to the Crimea?" 3.She asked me, "Will you be at home in the evening?" 4.He asked, "Where is the station?" 5.He asked, "Why did she come?" 6. She asked, "When did he arrive?" 7.He asked me, "Did you hear the noise?" 8.He asked her, "What do you do in the evenings?" 9.She asked us, "Where are you going?" 10.She asked the boy,"How old are you?" 11.I asked him, "Can you do it for me?" 12.He asked me, "When did you receive a letter from your sister?" 13.She asked him, "How many English lessons do you have a week?" 14.He asked her, "Why didn't you come here yesterday?" 15.She asked him, "Do you have coffee or tea for breakfast?" 16.She asked me, "What will you do if you miss the train?"

Exercise 257.**Define what type the following attributive clauses refer to.**

1) I cannot find the letter which you gave me this morning. 2) Yesterday I spoke to a man, who had just returned from an Arctic expedition. 3) The clock which is hanging in the hall is slow. 4) The magazine which you lent me is very interesting. 5) This is the book that you need. 6) My father, who was a sailor, often tells me stories about the sea. 7) Yesterday I met an old friend, whom I recognized at once. 8) The garden which is at the back of the house is very small. 9) A man who has no patience cannot play chess well. 10) My son has a German teacher, who knows German perfectly. 11) The street that leads to the theatre is very wide. 12) A man who looks after the books in a library is called a librarian. 13) Is that the man whom they are looking for? 14) The building which you can see over there is very old.

Exercise 258.**Translate into Kazakh language:**

1) The reporter spoke very loudly so that the people who were sitting in the last rows could hear him. 2) The secretary put the mail on the table so that the director would look it through. 3) I'll give you these magazines so that you will read a few interesting articles. 4) The father gave his son some money so that he would buy two theatre tickets. 5) He sent them a telegram so that they would be informed of the arrival of the ship in time. 6) Switch on the light so that it will be lighter in the room. 7. I'll leave you my notes so that you can read them before your examination. 8) I put the letter into my text-book so that he should not find it. 9) The children put on masks so that no one should recognize them. 10) We hung out a lantern so that they shouldn't get lost in the mist. 11) The girl hid behind a tree so that her brother would not notice her.

Exercise 259.**Change the following imperative sentences into indirect speech.**

1. He said to us: "Come here tomorrow". 2. I said to Mike: "Send me a telegram as soon as you arrive". 3. Father said to me: "Don't stay there long". 4.

Peter said to them: "Don't leave the room until I come back". 5. "Take my luggage to Room 145," he said to the porter. 6. He said to me: "Ring me up tomorrow". 7. "Bring me a cup of black coffee", she said to the waiter. 8. "Don't be late for dinner", said brother to us. 9. Jane said to us: "Please tell me all you know about it". 10. She said to Nick: "Please don't say anything about it to your sister". 11. The teacher said to me: "Hand this note to your parents, please". 12. Oleg said to his sister: "Put the letter into an envelope and give it to Kate". 13. "Please help me with this work, Henry", said Robert. 14. "Please bring me some fish soup," he said to the waitress. 15. "Don't worry over such a small thing", she said to me. 16. "Please don't mention it to anybody," Mary said to her friend. 17. "Promise to come and see me", said Jane to Alice.

Exercise 260.

Change the following imperative sentences into indirect speech.

1. "My friend lives in Moscow", said Alec. 2. "You have not done your work well", said the teacher to me. 3. The poor man said to the rich man: "My horse is wild. It can kill your horse". 4. The rich man said to the judge: "This man's horse killed my horse". 5. "This man spoke to me on the road," said the woman. 6. "I can't explain this rule to you," said my classmate to me. 7. The teacher said to the class: "We shall discuss this subject tomorrow". 8. The woman said to her son: "I am glad I am here". 9. Mike said: "We have bought these books today". 10. She said to me: "Now I can read your translation". 11. Our teacher said: "Thackeray's novels are very interesting". 12. She said: "You will read this book in the 9th form". 13. Nellie said: "I read 'Jane Eyre' last year."

Exercise 261.

Change the following imperative sentences into indirect speech.

1. Masha said: "I usually spend my holidays in the south". 2. She said: "I spent my holidays in the Crimea last year". 3. Boris said: "I go to the south every year". 4. He said: "I am going to a rest-home tomorrow". 5. Ann said to us: "They haven't yet come". 6. She said to us: "they arrived in St.Petersburg yesterday". 7. I said: "I was in London last year. My friends in London sometimes invite me to spend my holidays with them". 8. Nick said: "I have never been to London. I think I shall go there next year". 9. He said: "I shall not stay with my friends too long". 10. He said to me: "They are staying at the 'Europe' hotel. 11. He said: "They are leaving next Monday." 12. The clerk said to them "You can leave the key with the maid upstairs."

Exercise 262.

Change the following imperative sentences into indirect speech.

1. Oleg said: "My room is on the second floor." 2. He said: "I am sure she will ring me up when she is back in St.Petersburg." 3. Misha said: "I saw them at my parents' house last year". 4. He said: "I haven't seen my cousin today." 5. "I don't go to this shop very often," she said. 6. Tom said: "I have already had breakfast, so I am not hungry." 7. He said: "I have just received a letter from my

uncle.” 8. “I am going to the theatre tonight,” he said to me. 9. Mike said: “I spoke to Mr. Brown this morning.” 10. He said to her: “I shall do it today if I have time.” 11. I said to them: “I can give you my uncle’s address.”

Exercise 263.

Change the following imperative sentences into indirect speech.

1. He said to me: “I want to see you today. 2. She said: “I am free tonight”. 3. Mother said to me: “I feel bad today.” 4. The pupil said to the teacher: “I can do my homework after dinner.” 5. The teacher said to Jack: “You work hard, I know. You are a good boy.” 6. The teacher said to the pupils: “Next year we shall have six hours of English a week.” 7. The old man said to the girl: “You can sing perfectly. I think you will be a famous singer.” 8. My sister said to me: “You look very well, much better than you looked yesterday. I think you have recovered after your illness.” 9. My brother said to me: “I am going to become a doctor.” 10. My uncle said to us: “I buy several newspapers every day.” 11. “You are an excellent cook. Everything is so tasty,” said my guest to me. 12. The student said: “I can’t answer this question. I don’t understand it.” 13. The mother said: “The children are in the nursery, doctor.” 14. “I have no time for lunch today,” said the boy to his mother. 15. “You speak English very well,” said the woman to me.

Exercise 264.

Explane the rules of changing the following sentences from the direct speech into the indirect speech.

1. He said, “**I work hard.** → He said (that) he **worked** hard.
2. He said, “**I am working** hard. → He said (that) he **was working** hard.
3. He said, “**I have worked** hard. → He said (that) he **had worked** hard.
4. He said, “**I worked** hard. → He said (that) he **had worked** hard.
5. He said, “**I am going to work hard.** → He said (that) he **was going to work** hard.
6. He said, “**I will** work hard. → He said (that) he **would work** hard.
7. He said, “**I can work** hard. → He said (that) he **could work** hard.
8. He said, “**I may** work hard. → He said (that) he **might work** hard.
9. He said, “**I have to work** hard. → He said (that) he **had to work** hard.
10. He said, “**I must work** hard. → He said (that) he **must work** hard.
11. He said, “**I should work** hard. → He said (that) he **should work** hard.
12. He said, “**I ought to work** hard. → He said (that) he **ought to work** hard.
13. What did Mary just say? I didn’t hear her. I didn’t hear her. → She **said** (that) she is busy.
14. What did Mary say when she got home last night? → She **said** (that) she **was** busy.

Exercise 265.

Change the following sentences into the indirect speech.

1. Little Betty said, “I am sleepy”. 2. Sally said, “I don’t like chocolate.”
3. Margaret said, “I am planning a trip to the South”. 4. Tom said, “I have

already eaten lunch". 5. Kate said, "I called my doctor". 6. Mr. Ford said, "I'm going to fly to Chicago". 7. The speaker said, "I will come to the meeting". 8. Jane said, "I can't afford to buy a new TV-set." 9. The teacher said, "Now, children, you may go home". 10. Ted said, "I have to finish my report". 11. Mr. Durnell said, "I must talk to the director. 12. Alison said, "I should call me parents".

Exercise 266.

Change the following sentences into the indirect speech.

Pattern: *I need to talk to you. → Mother told me that she needed to talk to me.*

1. I will call you tomorrow. 2. I know your parents. 3. I have met your friends. 4. I'm getting hungry. 5. I'm not married. 6. I like your watch. 7. I won't be in class tomorrow. 8. I can't read your handwriting. 9. I don't like fish. 10. I walked to school this morning. 11. I have to take one more exam. 12. I think you speak English very well. 13. You should think about it. 14. I'll meet you after class for a cup of coffee. 15. I'm going to take a vacation in Hawaii. 16. Your pronunciation is very good. 17. I'm already bought this disc. 18. I may be absent from class tomorrow.

Exercise 267.

Change the following sentences into the indirect speech.

Pattern: *Olga said to me, "Are you free?" → Olga asked me if I was free.*

1. Do you know any foreign language? 2. Are you shocked? 3. Can you send this fax? 4. Did you enjoy the book? 5. Are you going to join us? 6. Will you be at home tonight? 7. Have you ever been to the North Pole? 8. Can you hear me? 9. Are you listening to me? 10. Do you need my help? 11. Did you finish your letter yesterday? 12. Is it going to rain? 13. Do you know how to knit? 14. Do you know if she is in Moscow? 15. Can you come to the party? 16. Do you have a family? 17. Have you ever been in Africa? 18. Did you sight the papers? 19. When will you change your mind? 20. Are you going to speak to them?

Exercise 268.

Change the following sentences into the indirect speech.

Pattern: *Helen said, "Where do you live?" → Helen asked where I lived.*

1. Where is your apartment? 2. What do you need? 3. Do you need a dictionary? 4. When does the semester end? 5. Why are you so sad today? 6. Where do you live? 7. How often do you go downtown? 8. Where do you buy your clothes? 9. Who do you usually discuss your problems with? 10. Is that okay? 11. When and where did you first meet? 12. Where do you study? 13. What did you do after class yesterday? 14. Where is your car? 15. Why aren't you listening to me? 16. What are you thinking about? 17. Where is my bag? 18. What time do you usually get up?

Exercise 269.

Define what type the following attributive clauses refer to.

1. I cannot find the letter which you gave me this morning. 2. Yesterday I spoke to a man, who had just returned from the Arctic expedition. 3. The clock which is hanging in the hall is slow. 4. The magazine which you lent me is very interesting. 5. This is the book that you need. 6. My father, who was a sailor, often tells me stories about the sea. 7. Yesterday I met an old friend whom I recognized at once. 8. The garden which is at the back of the house is very small. 9. A man who has no patience cannot play chess well. 10. My son has a German teacher, who knows German perfectly. 11. The street that leads to the theatre is very wide. 12. A man who looks after the books in a library is called a librarian. 13. Is that the man whom they are looking for? 14. The building which you can see over there is very old.

Exercise 270.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. The reporter spoke very loudly so that the people who were sitting in the last rows could hear him. 2. The secretary put the mail on the table so that the director would look in thought. 3. I'll give you these magazines so that you will read a few interesting articles. 4. The father gave his son some money so that he would buy two theatre tickets. 5. He sent them a telegram so that they would be informed of the arrival of the ship in time. 6. Switch on the light so that it will be lighter in the room. 7. I'll leave you my notes so that you can read them before your examinations. 8. I put the letter into my box so that no one should recognize them. 10. We hung out a lantern so that they shouldn't get lost in the mist. 11. The girl hid behind a tree so that her brother would not notice her.

Exercise 271.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. They would have reached the top of the mountain before dark if they had started earlier. 2. I should come and see you off if I didn't live so far away. 3. If we had had no luggage, we should have walked home. 4. I should have met you if I had known of your arrival. 5. The man would have been killed if the train hadn't stopped quickly. 6. If you had asked me for money yesterday. I should have lent you some. 7. Everything will be all right, if she is here tomorrow. 8. If the weather hadn't been so bad, the plane would have taken off at ten o'clock. 9. If you had seen him, you wouldn't have recognized him. 10. If three machines or more were ordered the price would be reduced by 5 per cent. 11. They would have found the manager at the office if they had called there yesterday. 12. If the goods are shipped after the 1st of December, we shall not accept them.

Exercise 272.

Translate into Kazakh language:

1. They would have reached the top of the mountain before dark if they had started earlier. 2. I should come and see you off if I didn't live so far away.

3. If we had no luggage, we should have walked home. 4. I should have met you if I had known of your arrival. 5. The man would have been killed if the train hadn't stopped quickly. 6. If you had asked me for money yesterday, I should have lent you some. 7. Everything will be all right if she is here to-morrow. 8. If the weather hadn't been so bad, the plane would have taken off at 10 o'clock. 9. Of you had seen him, you wouldn't have recognized him. 10. If three machines or more were order the price would be reduced by 5 per cent.

Exercise 273.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. You did not ring me up, so I did not know you were in trouble. If 2. You left the child alone in the room, so he hurt himself. If 3. They spent a year in the tropics, so they got very sun-tanned. If 4. It rained heavily, so we got drenched to the skin. If 5. Why didn't you watch the cat? It ate all the fish. If 6. A huge black cloud appeared from behind the forest, so we had to turn back and hurry home. If 7. The travellers had no camera with them, so they could not take photos of the beautiful scenery. If 8. There was no sugar left, so we had to go to the shop late in the evening. If 9. This house is very nice and comfortable , but it is not very good for living because it is situated close to a chemical plant and the air around is very bad. If 10. He is an excellent specialist, but I cannot ask his advise because I am not acquainted with him. If 11. You cannot enjoy this merry evening party because you have a toothache. If 12. You know the material well enough, but you are very absent-minded and that's why you always make many mistakes. If 13. We shall not go to see them because it is very late. If 14. Naturally she was angry because you were in her way. If 15. He always gets top marks in mathematics because it is his favourite subject and he works a lot at it. If 16. I did not translate the article yesterday because I had no dictionary. If 17. We lost our way because the night was pitch-dark. If 18. The box was so heavy that I could not carry it. That's why I took a taxi. If 19. I had a bad headache yesterday, that's why I did not come to see you. If 20. The ship was sailing near the coast, that's why it struck a rock. If 21. He was not in town, therefore he was not present at our meeting. If 22. The pavement was so slippery that I fell and hurt my leg. If 23. They made a fire, and the frightened wolves ran away. If 24. It is late, and I have to go home. If 25. I was expecting my friend to come, that's why I could not go to the cinema with you. If 26. The sea is rough, and we cannot sail to the island. If

Exercise 274.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. I should be delighted if I (to have) such a beautiful furcoat. 2. If I (to rain), we shall have to stay at home. 3. If he (to work) hard, he would have achieved great progress. 4. If it is not too cold, I (not to put) on my coat. 5. I (to write) the composition long ago if you had not disturbed me. 6. If he (not to read) so much, he would not be so clever. 7. If my friend (to be) at home, he will tell us

what to do. 8.If he were not such an outstanding actor,he (not to have) so many admires. 9.If you(to give) me your address, I shall write you a letter. 10.If she(not to be) so absent-minded,she would be a much better student. 11.If my sister does not go to the south,we (to spend) the summer in St. Petersburg together. 12.If they (not to go) to Moscow last year, they would not have heard that famous musician. 13.If you (not to get) tickets for the Philharmonic,we shall stay at home. 14.If you were not so careless about your health,you (to consult) the doctor.

Exercise 275.

Make up conditional sentences:

1.If she (to ask) me yesterday, I should certainly have told her all about it. 2.If you (to do) your morning exercises every day, your health would be much better. 3.If he is not very busy,he (to agree) to go to the museum with us. 4.If I (not to be) present at the lesson, I should not have understood this difficult rule. 5.If he reads fifty pages every day, his vocabualary (to increase) greatly. 6.If they (to know) it before, they would lave taken measures. 7. If I (to get) this book, I shall be happy. 8. If you really loved music, you (to go) to the Philharmonic much more often. 9. If you had not wasted so much time, you (not to miss) the train. 10. If you (not to miss) the train you would have arrived in time. 11. You (not to miss) the teacher's explanation if you had arrived in time. 12. You would have understood he rule if you (not to miss) the teacher's explanation. 13. If you (to understand) the rule, you would have written the test-paper successfully. 14. If you had written the test-paper successfully you (not to get) a "two". 15. Your mother (not to scold) you if you had not got a "two". 16. If your mother (not to scold) you, youwould have felt happier.

Exercise 276.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. If it (to snow),the children will play snowballs. 2. If I (not to know) English, I should not be able to enjoy Byron's poetry. 3. I (not to do) it if you did not ask me. 4. If men(to have) no weapons, would wars be possible? 5. You will never finish your work if you(to waster) your time like that. 6. If I (to have)his telephone number, I should easily settle this matter with him. 7. If I (to have) this rare book, I should gladly lend it you. 8. The dish would have been much more tasty if she (to be) a better cook. 9. He never (to phone) you if I hadn't reminded him to do it. 10. Your brother (to become) much stronger if he took cold batho regularly. 11. If he (to be)more courageous , he would not be afraid. 12. If the fisherman had been less patient, he (not to catch) so much fish. 13. If you (to put) the ice- cream into the refrigerator, it would not have melted. 14. If I (to know) the result now, Iwould phone her immediately. 15. If you had let me know yesterday, I (to bring) you my book.

Exercise 277.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. If you (to ring) me up, I shall tell you a secret. 2. If you (to be) a poet, you would write beautiful poetry. 3. If he did not read so much, he (not to know) English literature so well. 4. If he (to come to our house yesterday, he would have met his friend. 5. If he (not to pass) his examination, he will not get a scholarship. 6. If she (not to help) me, I should have been in a very difficult situation. 7. My father would have more free time if he (not to read) so many newspapers. 8. If only you had let me know, I (to go there immediately. 9. If I were a famous singer, I (to get) a lot of flowers every day. 10. If you (not to buy) coffee, we shall drink tea. 11. If he is free tomorrow, he certainly (to come) to our party. 12. My brother would not have missed so many lessons if he (not to hurt) his leg. 13. If my friend (to work) in my office, we should meet every day. 14. If you spoke English every day, you (to improve) your language skills. 15. If you get a "five", your mother (to be) happy. 16. If she (to return) earlier, she would have been able to see him before he left. 17. If these shoes were not too big for me, I (to buy) them.

Exercise 278.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. I should be very glad if he (to come) to my place. 2. If he (to live) in St. Petersburg, he would go to the Hermitage every week. 3. If you (to go) to the theatre with us last week, you would have enjoyed the evening. 4. You won't understand the rule if you (not to listen) to the teacher. 5. If he weren't such a book-worm, he (not to spend) so much time sitting in the library. 6. I should not have bought the car if my friend (not to lend) me money. 7. If he did not live in St. Petersburg, we (not to meet) so often. 8. If he had warned me, I (to do) the work in time. 9. If my brother (to be) in trouble, I shall help him of course. 10. If I don't manage to finish my report today, I (to stay) at home tomorrow. 11. If she were more careful about her diet, she (not to be) so stout. 12. You would not feel so bad if you (not to smoke) too much. 13. If he (to learn) the poem, he would not have got a bad mark. 14. If you gave me your dictionary for a couple of days, I (to translate) this text. 15. If I (to be) a musician, I should be very happy. 16. If Barbara (to get) up at half past eight, she would have been late for school. 17. If you had not put the cup on the edge of the table, it (not to get) broken.

Exercise 279.

Make up conditional sentences:

1. You did not ring me up, so I did not know you were in trouble. If 2. You left the child alone in the room, so he hurt himself. If 3. They spent a year in the tropics, so they got very sun-tanned. If 4. It rained heavily, so we got drenched to the skin. If 5. Why didn't you watch the cat? It ate all the fish. If 6. A huge black cloud appeared from behind the forest, so we had to turn back and hurry home. If 7. The travellers had no camera with them, so they could not take photos of the beautiful scenery. If 8. There was no sugar left, so we had to go to the shop late in the evening. If 9. This house is very

nice and comfortable, but it is not very good for living because it is situated close to a chemical plant and the air around is very bad. If 10. He is an excellent specialist, but I cannot ask his advice because I am not acquainted with him. If 11. You cannot enjoy this merry evening party because you have a toothache. If ... 12. You know the material well enough, but you are very absent-minded and that's why you always make many mistakes. If 13. We shall not go to see them because it is very late. If 14. Naturally she was angry because you were in her way. If 15. He always gets top marks in mathematics because it is his favourite subject and he works a lot at it. If 16. I did not translate the article yesterday because I had no dictionary. If 17. We lost our way because the night was pitch-dark. If 18. The box was so heavy that I could not carry it. That's why I took a taxi. If 19. I had a bad headache yesterday, that's why I did not come to see you. If 20. The ship was sailing near the coast, that's why it struck a rock. If 21. He was not in town, therefore he was not present at our meeting. If 22. The pavement was so slippery that I fell and hurt my leg. If 23. They made a fire, and the frightened wolves ran away. If 24. It is late, and I have to go home. If 25. I was expecting my friend to come, that's why I could not go to the cinema with you. If 26. The sea rough, and we cannot sail to the island. If

Exercise 280.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. If it stopped raining, you could go for a walk. 2. If I had known it, I could have helped them. 3. If it were a little warmer, we could bathe in the river today. 4. They could have reached the town earlier if they had walked faster. 5. We could have shipped the goods yesterday, if we had received your telegram earlier. 6. If they had known it before, they might have prevented the catastrophe.

Exercise 281.

Translate into the Kazakh language.

1. We thought they had left Moscow. 2. Nobody knew he was well. 3. The shop we buy vegetables from is closed on Mondays. 4. All he said is true. 5. He showed me the letter he had received from his friend. 6. He showed us everything he bought there. 7. Who is the man Comrade A. is speaking to? 8. The girl you saw in the garden is my sister's daughter. 9. Had I time I should learn French. 10. Were he in town he would help us. 11. The accident might not have occurred had they been more careful. 12. The doctor they sent for will be here in half an hour. 13. Should he come ask him to wait. 14. I told him all I knew about it. 15. Here is the book she spoke about yesterday. 16. I was sure he knew Comrade A. had returned. 17. Had they called at the office yesterday, they would have found me there. 18. Were I in his place I should refuse to go there. 19. I should have told him about it had I seen him yesterday.

Test 1

(Зат есімге арналған тест сұрақтары)

1. Point out the collective noun:
A) monkey B) mouse C) tiger D) animal E) bear
2. Point out the uncountable noun:
A) water B) house C) desk D) book E) girl
3. Point out the countable noun:
A) sugar B) rain C) tree D) gold E) milk
4. Point out the concrete noun:
A) mind B) pineapple C) knowledge D) happiness E) hope
5. Choose the abstract noun:
A) doctor B) kindness C) teacher D) student E) mother
6. Choose the proper noun:
A) village B) county C) country D) Astana E) family
7. Choose the human noun:
A) father B) hedge C) furniture D) food E) meal
8. Choose the non-human noun:
A) daughter B) niece C) nephew D) chair E) aunt
9. Choose the feminine gender:
A) stewardess B) brother C) bachelor D) husband E) boy
10. Point out the masculine gender:
A) grandmother B) sister C) cousin D) wife E) girl
11. Point out the masculine gender:
A) daughter B) bridegroom C) authoress D) hen sparrow E) aunt
12. Choose the right equivalent:
Бір ботелке су.
A) a bottle of water B) a box of water C) a glass of water D) a pot of water E) a cup of water
13. Choose the right equivalent:
Бір парак қағаз.
A) a loaf of paper B) two pieces of paper C) a cake of paper
D) a piece of paper E) a slice of paper
14. Choose the right equivalent:
Бір бөлік сабын.
A) a cake of soap B) two pieces of soap C) a slice of soap D) a pot of soap
E) a chunk of soap
15. Choose the right equivalent:
Бір тілім нан.
A) two slices of bread B) a slice of bread C) a tablet of bread
D) a bar of bread E) a yard of bread
16. Choose the possessive case of the noun:
The car of my brother.
A) my brother s car B) my brother cars C) my brothers's cars D)

- car my brother's cars E) my brother of car
17. Choose the possessive case of the noun:
The activities of women.
A) The women's activitie B) The women's activities C) The woman's activities D) The women activitie E) The woman activitie
18. Choose the possessive case of the noun:
The toys of their children.
A) their children's toys B) their children toy C) his childs'toys D) our childrens' toys E) their childrens' toy
19. Choose the possessive case of the noun:
The analyses of the research work.
A) The research works analyses B) The research work's analysis C) The researches works' analyses D) The research works' analyses E) The research works' analysis
20. Choose the noun which is used only in singular form:
A) machinery B) athletics C) son-in-law D) chair E) advice
21. Choose the noun which is used only in singular form:
A) corpus B) sister-in-law C) alphabet D) focus E) datum
22. Match the right verb to the given suffix *-er*:
A) pay B) differ C) dance D) deliver E) accept
23. Match the right verb to the given suffix *-age*:
A) approve B) arrive C) pack D) do E) study
24. Match the right verb to the given suffix *-ress*:
A) edit B) write C) read D) wait E) drive
25. Match the right verb to the given suffix *-j*:
A) deliver B) close C) open D) come E) show
26. Match the right verb to the given suffix *-шея/*:
A) pass B) see C) drive D) advertise E) import
27. Match the right noun to the given suffix *-dom*:
A) hand B) king C) human D) friend E) mouth
28. Match the right noun to the given suffix *-hood*:
A) art B) patriot C) army D) child E) partner
29. Choose the right suffix to the word *hand*:
A) -ful B) -hood C) -ism D) -dom E) -ist
30. Choose the right suffix to the given word *warm*:
A) -ship B) -ian C) -ness D) -th E) -ence

Test 2

(Артикльге арналған тест сұрақтары)

Choose the correct answers:

1. He is ... engineer. He is at ... home now.
A) a...the B) an...- C) the...a D) a...a E) an... the

2. Could you close ... door, please?
A) a B) the C) - D) an E) next
3. He does it with ... pleasure.
A) a B) the C) an D) - E) some
4. Is he giving you ... piece of ... chalk?
A) the ... a B) a ... a C) an ... a D) a ... - E) the ... the
5. This morning I bought newspaper and magazine.
A) a... an B) a...the C) the...a D) a...a E) an...a
6. Dr. Grant is ... distinguished scholar.
A) the B) an C) a D) - E) this
7. How often do you go to ... dentist?
A) an B) the C) a D) - E) that
8. ... news that her son was getting well brought great comfort to her.
A) The B) - C) An D) A E) Any
9. There-were no chairs, so I had to sit on ...floor.
A) the B) a C) an D) - any E) some
10. There's ... small supermarket at ... end of... street I live in.
A) the ... the ... an B) a ... the ... the C) an ... a ... the D) - ... a ... the
E) the ... a ... an
11. Sonning is ... picturesque village on ... bank of... Thames.
A) the... a... the B) a... the... the C) - ...the... a D) - ... a E) -... a... the
12. This is ... cap. ... cap is black.
A) a ... a B) a ...the C) the ... the D) the ... a E) a ... an
13. -“Is Kate ... teacher?”
-“No, she is ... doctor.”
A) a ... the B) a ... a C) a ... an D) the ... the E) the ...
14. What's ... name of that man we met yesterday?
A) this B) a C) - D) an E) the
I had funny dream last night.
A) the B) - C) a D) an E) that
15. I got letter and telegram from my friend yesterday.
A) the ... a B) - ... - C) a ... an D) a ... a E) an ... a
22. He has got ...problem. Can you help him?
A) the B) - C) a D) an E) that
16. I haven't been to ... cinema for ages.
A) this B) a C) - D) an E) the
- 17...Moon goes round ... earth every 27 days.
A) the ... the B) - ... - C) a ... an D) a ... a E) an ... a
- 18.What is ...highest mountain in ... world?
A) the ... a B) - ... - C) a ... an D) the ... the E) an ... a
- 19.Arman lives in ...small village in ...country.
A) a... the B) a...a C) a...an D) the...the E) the...
- 20.Saule and I arrived on ... time.

A) the B) - C) a D) an E) that

Test 3

(Есімдікті қайталауға арналған тест сұрақтары)

Choose the right pronoun. (Қажетті есімдікті таңдаңыз):

1 vegetables are very good.

A) This B) These C) That D) Them E) They

2.....is my first work.

A) this B) these C) those D) they E) than

1. She showed a very interesting book.

A) to me B) me C) I D) himself E) your

2. I always take some money with

A) I B) myself C) me D) him E) her

3. There is a wish worries me.

A) who B) whom C) whose D) which E) what

4. I know ... address, but she doesn't know

A) she/ mine B) her/my C) hers/mine D) hers/my E) her/mine

5. There is.. in the room.

A) anything B) somebody C) any D) no E) some

6. Do you want to read this book or book?

A) that B) the C) these D) those E) this

7. Give me ... pen.

A) you B) your C) yours D) of yours E) we

8. My brother can do it

A) himself B) myself C) ourselves D) itself E) yourself

9. ... are teachers.

A) They B) Me C) He D) I E) She

10. I am a student. ... name is Asel.

A) I B) my C) our D) he E) her

Test 4

(Модаль етістіктерге арналған тест сұрақтары)

Choose the right modal verb:

1. You ... take care of your parents.

A) must B) shall C) are D) can E) may

2. I ... go to the library to prepare my report.

A) must B) may C) are not allowed to D) has to E) could

3. Must I come tomorrow? - No, you

A) can't B) can't to C) needn't D) to be able to E) has to

4. We ... hurry. The train arrives in half an hour.

A) can B) could C) may D) might E) must

5. You ... help your mother about the house, it's your duty.

A) must B) may C) can D) would E) might

6. My brother .. speak four foreign languages.

A) may B) can C) must D) shouldn't E) can't

7. May I invite my friend to the party? - Yes, you
A) could B) can't C) couldn't D) may E) need
8. ... you translate this text without dictionary?
A) May B) Can C) Might D) Ought E) Has to
9. I ... speak English quite well.
A) can B) could C) may D) might E) must
10. This pensioner is old and he ... well.
A) may hear B) can hear C) can't hear D) can't listen to
D) was able to heard
11. He has lived in England for some time but he ... speak English.
A) can't B) may C) has to D) ought E) must
12. He ... read at the age of four.
A) has to B) need C) could D) is to E) may
13. David can't speak Russian, ... he?
A) does B) can C) could D) has E) did
14. She spoke in a very low voice, but I ... understand what she said.
A) can B) may C) might be D) could E) have to
15. She play the piano quite beautifully.
A) must B) can C) may D) have to E) should
16. Asem is only ... nine, but she play chess well.
A) may B) ought to C) can D) should E) must to
17. I'd like to swim.
A) may to B) be able to C) can D) should E) must to
18. You....start working harder!
A) may B) able C) can D) should E) must
19. You ... turn right there.
A) may to B) able to C) can D) should E) have to
20. We think.....he see a doctor.
A) may to B) able to C) can D) should E) must to
21. He used to run fast.
A) may to B) be able to C) can D) should E) must to
22. My mother hasn't sleep very well recently.
A) may to B) been able to C) can D) should E) must to
23. They not have seen me.
A) may to B) able to C) can D) should E) might
- 24.1 find the keys.
A) may to B) able to C) has to D) can't E) need
25. 'You look tired .' 'Yes, I sleep last night'
A) may to B) able to C) can't D) couldn't E) must to
- 26.1 have got plenty of time. I leave yet.
A) may to B) able to C) can't D) mustn't E) needn't
27. Do you think she apply for this job?
A) may to B) ought to C) can't D) couldn't E) must to

28. We don't think she get married.
 A) may to B) able to C) can D) should E) might
29. He go to the hospital yesterday.
 A) had to B) able to C) can D) should E) must to
30. Anel go somewhere now.
 A) may to B) has to C) can D) should E) might

Test 5

(Етістіктің шақтарын қайталауға арналған тест сұрақтары)

Choose the correct answer:

1. ... you still ... the article?
 A) Are ... reading B) Do ... read C) Did ... read D) Have ... read E) Was ... reading
2. They ... TV now.
 A) is watching B) was watching C) watch D) are watching E) watching
3. You ... this text now.
 A) are reading B) has read C) is reading D) was reading E) has been reading
4. Grandmother is in the kitchen. She an apple-cake.
 A) are making B) is making C) makes D) made E) is made
5. We about him now.
 A) talked B) was talking C) is talked D) has talked E) are talking
6. I ... writing a letter at the moment.
 A) is B) am C) are D) be E) must
7. What... they doing?
 A) is B) am C) do D) does E) are
8. The film at 7 o'clock. Let's hurry.
 A) is beginning B) are beginning C) begin D) begins E) begun
9. Can you help me? I the way to the park.
 A) am not know B) does not know C) don't know D) didn't knew E) haven't know
10. My daughter apples, but she likes oranges.
 A) don't likes B) doesn't likes C) doesn'tlike D) did like E)haven't likes
11. It often ... in this part of the country.
 A) is raining B) rains C) was raining D) raining E)has rained
12. My grandmother ... to watch interesting films on TV.
 A) like B) liked C) likes D) shall like E)has liked
13. ... Brain wake up at 7 o'clock every day?
 A) Has B) Do C) Did D) Done E) Does
14. The sun ... in the East.
 A) will rise B) rises C) is rising D) was rising E) will be rising
15. ... she cook breakfast every morning?
 A) Did B) Do C) Does D) Was E) Were
16. It.... yesterday.

- A) had rain B) is raining C) rained D) rains E) have rained
17. I visited London in January. I ... at a nice hotel.
A) stayed B) has stayed C) staying D) is staying E) have staying
18. We a holiday last year.
A) didn't have B) doesn't have C) hadn't have D) don't have
E) haven't have
19. What language... you ... five years ago?
A) did ... learn B) does ... learn C) do ... learn D) learnt E) are ... learning
20. Columbus ... America in 1492.
A) discovered B) were discovered C) discover D) discovering
E) has discovered
21. Richard ... a letter last week.
A) to write B) writing C) writes D) written E) wrote
22. They ... with us last Christmas.
A) to stay B) stays C) stayed D) stay E) was staying
23. Yesterday I ... my best friend.
A) saw B) seen C) see D) will see E) seeing
24. I ... just... the dean.
A) was ... seen B) have.... seen C) has ... seen D) am ... seeing
E) was... seeing
25. My parents ... to Astana many times.
A) were B) was C) been D) have been E) has been
26. Our next lesson ... on Monday.
A) are going to B) will be C) was D) shall E) will
27. I ... visit my teacher tomorrow morning.
A) am going to B) would C) was D) shall be E) will
28. There ... a lot of work to do tomorrow.
A) are going to B) will be C) was D) shall E) will
29. ... an e-mail before?
A) Have you ever sent B) Did you ever send C) Do you send D) Had you send E) Does he send
30. Had you already James his birthday present when we gave him ours?
A) given B) been giving C) are giving D) were giving E) was giving
31. Gail hadn't me that she would help me, so I wasn't angry when she didn't.
A) tell B) tells C) told D) been telling E) is told
32. What tense form of the verb describes something that happens all the time or repeatedly?
A) Present Continuous B) Present Perfect C) Present Perfect Continuous D) Present Simple E) Future Simple
33. What tense form of the verb describes the action of this moment, now?

- A) Present Continuous B) Present Perfect C) Present Perfect Continuous D) Present Simple E) Future Simple
34. Which tense form of the verb describes the action, which has just finished?
A) Present Simple B) Present Continuous C) Future Simple D) Present Perfect E) Future Simple in the Past
35. What tense form do we use with the time adverbs: tomorrow, next week, next month, next year, etc.?
A) Present Simple B) Present Continuous C) Future Simple D) Present Perfect E) Future Simple in the Past
36. Choose the form of the Present Continuous Tense :
A) E / E-s/-es, do / does B) Have / has E₃/-ed C) am/is/are E₄-ing D) Shall / will E) E₂ /-ed, did
37. Choose the form of the Present Simple Tense :
A) V / V-s/-es, do / does B) Have / has V₃ /-ed C) am/is/are V₄-ing D) Shall / will E) V₂ /-ed, did
38. Choose the form of the Present Perfect Tense :
A) V / V-s/-es, do / does B) Have / has V₃/-ed C) am/is/are V-ing D) Shall/will V E) V₂/-ed, did
39. Choose the form of the Future Simple Tense :
A) V / V-s/-es, do / does B) Have / has V₃/-ed C) am/is/are V-ing D) Shall / will V E) V₂ /-ed, did
40. Choose the form of the Past Simple Tense :
A) V / V-s/-es, do / does B) Have / has V₃/-ed C) am/is/are V-ing
A) Shall / will V E) V₂ /-ed, did

Test 6

Choose the most suitable verb form:

- Do you want woken up in the morning.
A) to be B) is C) has been D) had been E) shall be
- She doesn't like ...what to do.
A) told B) beingtold C) have been told D) has been told E)been told
- He hopes he'll for the University football team.
A) chosen B) willbe chosen C) be chosen D)) is chosenE) havechosen
- His car . last night.
A) was damaged B) is damaged C) has been damaged D) will be damaged E) damaged
- The room .. every day.
A) were cleaned B) is cleaned C) have been cleaned D) cleaned E) will be cleaned
- She.....interviewed at the moment.
A) will be B) were been C) was been D) has been E) is being
- They. by train yesterday.
A) were sent B) was sent C) will be sent D) is sent E) have been sent

8. This car mustn't after 6 p.m.
A) be used B) will be used C) to be used D) was used E) is used
9. Your mother.....at the station.
A) will be met B) was met C) have been met D) must be met E) is met
10. Your bill should before you leave the hotel.
A) be paid B) was paid C) is paid D) paid E) must be paid
11. Your order. as soon as possible.
A) will be sent B) was sent C) is sent D) have been sent E) were sent
12. Our new house yet.
A) hasn't been finished B) wasn't finished C) won't be finished
D) weren't be finished E) hadn't finished
13. When they... about the new rules?
A) have been told B) will be told C) were... told D) is told E) told
14. The robbers as soon as they left the bank.
A) has arrested B) arrested C) will be arrested D) were arrested E) must arrested
15. Most of the food at the party
A) won't ate B) was eaten C) eaten D) ate E) eat
16. The exact time of the exam decided yet.
A) have B) haven't been C) shan't been D) hasn't been E) have been
17. My car serviced today.
A) was being B) is being C) have being D) were being E) has being
18. When.... this university ?
A) were ... built B) have been built C) was built D) is built E) are built
- 19.....Nothing about him.
A) known B) knew C) will be known D) has known E) is known
20. He.... some difficult questions at the exam.
A) was asked B) were asked C) will asked D) asked E) has asked
21. I don't like waiting.
A) have kept B) will kept C) has kept D) being kept E) was kept
- 22..... My car to Astana tomorrow.
A) was driven B) be driven C) will be driven D) has been driven E) had been driven
23. His car is really dirty: it for weeks.
A) was cleaned B) is cleaned C) hasn't been cleaned D) cleaned E) wasn't cleaned
24. I can't take the computer: it at the moment.
A) is being repaired B) repaired C) was repaired D) will repaired E) has repaired

Test 7

(Жаксыз етістікті қайталауға арналған тест сұрақтары)

Choose the suitable verbals - Infinitive, Gerund, Participle.

1. They have promised ... it to us this afternoon.
A) delivering B) will deliver C) to deliver D) deliver E) delivered
2. Why do you keep ... the same question?
A) ask B) asking C) asks D) in asking E) asked
3. I never enjoy ... in the rain.
A) walks B) walk C) walking D) of walking E) walked
4. Have you finished ... your homework yet?
A) do B) to do C) doing D) did E) done
5. He denied ... in the exam.
A) cheating B) cheat C) of cheating D) to cheat E) has cheating
6. I've decided ... to Florida next summer.
A) go B) to go C) goes D) on going E) went
7. Could you stop ... so much noise.
A) made B) making C) to make D) to making E) make
8. I like ... every morning before breakfast.
A) run B) running C) to run D) to running E) have running
9. I decided ... to Italy for my holidays.
A) go B) to go C) going D) went E) to went
10. He tried. them but there was no answer.
A) to telephone B) telephone C) telephoning D) has telephoning E) to telephoning
11. There is a lot of housework
A) do B) to do C) doing D) to doing E) done
12. Mike stopped ... six months ago.
A) smokes B) smoking C) smoke D) in smoking E) smoked
13. Don't forget.... the letter I gave you.
A) to post B) posting C) posted D) in posting E) being posted
14. She misses ... chess like she used to .
A) play B) to play C) playing D) played E) has played
15. I have given up
A) to smoking B) smoking C) have smoking D) smoke E) to smoke
16. He enjoys
A) singing B) to sing C) to singing D) has singing E) has sing
17. Have you ever considered ... as a teacher?
A) to work B) working C) to working D) has work E) has working
18. My mother doesn't fancy out this evening.
A) go B) going C) to go D) to going E) has go
19. I couldn't manage ... all the ice-cream.
A) eat B) eating C) to eat D) to eating E) have eat
20. He seems ... a lot of money.

- A) has B) to having C) have D) having E) to have
21. We claim solved the problem.
A) to have B) to having C) have D) having E) has
22. You can't stop me what I want.
A) to do B) to doing C) does D) doing E) have doing
23. I tried to avoid ... his questions.
A) to answer B) to answering C) answers D) answering E) answered
24. Saule has a tendency too much.
A) to talk B) to talking C) talks D) talking E) have talking
25. When I am tired I enjoy books.
A) to read B) to reading C) reading D) read E) have read
26. They don't want anybody
A) to know B) have know C) knowing D) know E) have knowing
27. He refuses any more questions.
A) answering B) have answer C) answer D) to answer E) answered
28. Stop .. him questions.
A) to ask B) have asked C) asking D) to asking E) have asked
29. I enjoy .. people from other countries.
A) to meet B) have meeting C) meeting D) to meeting E) have meet
30. She forgot any tea.
A) to buy B) have buying C) buying D) to buying E) have buy
31. I regretted not the house.
A) to buy B) have buying C) buying D) to buying E) have buy
32. He regrets her that she has failed.
A) to tell B) has tell C) telling D) to telling E) has telling
33. I agreed them outside the theatre.
A) to meet B) have meeting C) meeting D) to meeting E) have meet
34. This classroom needs
A) to tidying B) have tidying C) tidying D) to tidy E) have tidy
35. Do you like ... ?
A) to cook B) have cook C) cooking D) to cooking E) have cook

Test 8

(Предлогты қайталауға арналған тест сұрақтары)

Complete the sentences with the correct prepositions:

1. We'll see them ... Friday.
A) to B) on C) of D) for E) at
2. Please look ... the blackboard.
A) to B) for C) at D) through E) up
3. The red pen is ... the table, the brown pen is... my bag.
A) in ... on B) at... under C) from ... in D) on ... in E) to ... in
4. Please put a spoon ... your cup.
A) on B) to C) from D) in E) into

5. Please go ... that table, Nick, and sit
A) to ... down B) into ... down C) down ... to D) on ... to E) to ... into
6. Fred is ... home now.
A) in B) at C) to D) from E) for
7. We write a lot... sentences ... the blackboard.
A) of... in B) on ... at C) of... on D) of... at E) in ... in
8. What are you doing the weekend?
A) at B) in C) out D) from E) for
9. He goes ... home after classes.
A) to B) for C) at D) in E) -
10. We often go out.... the evenings.
A) in B) on C) to D) at E) -
11. We often go out Saturday evenings.
A) for B) of C) on D) out E) in
12. I usually have a holiday the summer.
A) at B) for C) on D) of E) in
13. I got married 1972.
A) at B) in C) of D) to E) by
14. He got married 21 June 1972.
A) on B) under C) of D) in E) at
15. The coasts ... the British Isles are washed ... the Atlantic Ocean.
A) in ... of B) of... at C) of... by D) to ... by E) - ... by
16. Our car run ... the bus.
A) across B) into C) with D) off E) from
17. All players shook hands the end of the match.
A) in B) of C) at D) up E) on
18. I want to start the meeting time, so please don't be late.
A) on B) with C) in D) to E) at
19. Our English class usually begins... 8 o'clock.
A) to B) on C) for D) at E) in
20. Sometimes he goes... a walk after supper.
A) on B) at C) for D) on E) in
21. We came here ... 1996.
A) near B) from C) on D) at E) in
22. They normally get paid the end ... the course.
A) with ... to B) in ... for C) at... of D) with ... for E) of... to
23. The shop is ... the chemist's and the market and ... the bus stop.
A) in... on B) on....among C) to...off D) for., through E) between... opposite
24. We think we'd rather have tea instead coffee.
A) by B) with C) of D) out E) at
25. This is.... a doubt the best computer ... the market.
A) without... on B) on... of C) without ...at D) without... off E) without... in

Content

Алғы сөз.....	3
Морфология.	
Зат есім (The noun).....	4
Артикль (The Article).....	18
Сын есім (The Adjective)	21
Сан есім (The Numeral).....	23
Есімдік (The Pronoun).....	24
Етістік (The Verb).....	34
There is / there are құрылымы	36
(Жай шақтардың жасалуы	
Finite forms of the verbs).....	37
Группа (Continuous).....	39
Группа (Perfect).....	41
Ырықсыз етістік шақтары.....	43
Модальдік етістіктер (Modal verbs).....	44
Тұйық етістік. (The Infinitive).	
Негізгі етістік нысандары.....	46
Герундий (The Gerund).....	49
Есімше	50
Үстеу (The adverb).....	52
Көмекші сөздер (The Preposition)	54
Одағай (The Interjection)	56
Синтаксис	59
Сөйлем мүшелері (Parts of the sentence).....	60
Салалас құрмалас сөйлем. (The Compound Sentences)	65
Сабақтас сөйлем. (Complex Sentences).....	67
Conditional sentences. Шартты сөйлемдер.....	69
Тыныс белгілері. (Punctuation marks).....	71
Кестелер	74
Жаттығулар.....	86
Тест	169
Әдебиеттер.....	182

ӘДЕБИЕТТЕР

1. Мисуно, Е. А. Перевод с английского языка на русский : практикум : учеб. пособие / Е. А. Мисуно, И. В. Шаблынина. – Минск : Аверсэв , 2009. - 255 с. – (Учебник высшей школы)
2. Широких, В. М. Теоретические материалы по лексикологии современного английского языка : учеб. пособие / В. М. Широких, Л. П. Кудреватых. - Глазов : Изд-во ГГПИ, 2005. - 104 с.
3. Весник, Д. А. Сборник упражнений по словообразованию современного английского языка / Д. А. Весник. - М., 1964. – 120 с.
4. Мешков, О. Д. Семантические аспекты словосложения английского языка. / О. Д. Мешков. – М. : Наука, 1986. – 221 с.
5. Мешков, О. Д. Словосложение в современном английском языке : учеб. пособие / О. Д. Мешков. - М. : Высш. шк., 1985. - 93 с.
6. Литвин, Ф. А. Многозначность слова в языке и речи : учеб. пособие для пед. ин-тов по спец. "Иностр.яз." / Ф. А. Литвин. - М. : Высш.шк., 1984.
7. Никитин, М. В. Лексическое значение слова (структура и комбинаторика) : учеб. пособие для пед. вузов по спец. "Иностр.яз." / М. В. Никитин. - М. : Высш.шк., 1983.
8. Туранский, И. И. Средства интенсификации высказывания в английском языке : учеб. пособие по спецкурсу / И. И. Туранский. – Куйбышев : КГПУ, 1987.
9. Садыкова, А.К. Ағылшын тілі практикумы : оқу құралы. / А. К. Садыкова . – Алматы , 2004 – 108 б .
10. Новицкая, Т.М. Практическая грамматика английского языка :учеб. / Т.М. Новицкая, Н.Д. Кучин. – М .,1995. – 315 с.
11. Каменецкайте, Н. Л. Синонимы в английской фразеологии : учеб. пособие для преподавателей и переводчиков / Н. Л. Каменецкайте. - М. :Международ.отношения, 1971.